Minecrafts Human Spirit

By: sonic3461

Fandom: minecraft

Summary: A lone human named Daniel, has nothing left. One night when trying out a new mod for Minecraft, he gets sucked into the world of Minecraftiea. He is now in a new world, filled with monsters, on a crazy adventure and is surrounded with a bunch of mod princesses. How will he survive? OCXHuge harem. Other tags added: sad, dark, human, lemons

Fic type: Games/Minecraft

Pairings/Main char.: [OC, Slime, Enderman, Creeper]

Published: 2016-04-26

Last updated: 2017-08-03

Words count: 75,395

Chapters count: 10

Converted using www.FF2EBOOK.com
Date: 2017-10-17

1. Chapter 1

Chapter 1: Memories and unexpecting events

(Daniel 1st person POV)

I sighed as I walked down the cement path of my city, listening to the sounds of people and cars moving from place to place, living out their normal lives. They all have something that I lost a long time ago…. happiness.

My name is Daniel Blaze. I'm a twenty year old human filled with nothing but emptiness. I wear a red T-shirt with a leather black jacket. The rest of my attire consists of red and black shoes, black fingerless gloves, and a pair of red jeans. On my left cheek there is a scar from long ago during my childhood. And finally around my neck was a golden pendant, a pendant that held within it a picture of me and the only person I ever loved with all my heart, my mother.

She meant everything to me. She was my whole world, but she died from Cancer when I was ten. I became devastated and sad by her death. When she passed, my grandfather Errick, took me into his home. Through the past ten years, he taught me how to wield a sword, as well as karate and MMA (Mixed Martial Arts). Through those years, he was a father to me, but he then became ill. I got word my grandfather was injected with some kind of deadly poison, which is fatal to the human body. From the news, I knew he wasn't going to make it. Three weeks later, he passed as well, leaving me alone in this world... I couldn't believe the only two people I held dear in my heart were gone forever.

I didn't have any friends from my time living in Florida. I was alone, living in the shadows, with no one to comfort me or be at my side. During my time of being alone in this cruel world, I tried to help others out as best I can. My Grandfather told me before he died to always help others in need. I'll never forget his words, and I'll never forget him and my

Mother. I didn't know what to do in my life now, but everything would be changed forever.

As I continued strolling through other people as they chatted away in their business, something caught my attention. Someone was looking at me. It was guy, around my age, I think, has brown hair, and shockingly blank white eyes, with an evil smirk. Before I could react, he vanished when a ton of people blocked my view. He disappeared in thin air. Am I going crazy? I'm just not sure what just happened. No, I just must be seeing things. I had a rough day after all. I rubbed my head and continued onward to my home.

I eventually arrived at my Grandfather's home and walked inside, closing the door behind me with another sigh. After my grandfather's passing, I became the owner of the house. I didn't have any problems paying the taxes and so forth, because the payment was low, and the house electricity, water and so forth wasn't used much when my Grandfather lived here. Whenever I look at one of the family pictures near the fireplace, I would frown a little, knowing I still missed him. But at least there was one thing I truly and always have to remember my grandfather by.

I walked into the living room and pulled out a sword from a drawer, gently holding it in my hands. The sword was sheathed in a black sheath, made out of strong leather with a metal compartment inside of it. I gently grabbed the handle and slowly, inch by inch, pulled out the blade. Once it was fully removed from its sheath, I held it up for myself to inspect yet again. The blade of the sword was made not out of a metal, but instead it was made out of a crystal compound and a black stone edge. I don't even know what the sword was made out of, neither he knew as well, but he told me the material of the sword were very valuable.

The sword was a Katana, one which belonged to my grandfather. It was his most prized possession. He acquired this sword from his late grandfather, to whom I don't know, but he told me he was a great

warrior, with a pure heart of gold. This sword was given to me by him on my nineteenth birthday, a year before his passing, and told me it would bring me good luck.

I continued looking at the blade, seeing the reflection of my face on the crystal part of the blade. My reflection was then replaced with my grandfathers, and he was smiling at me. I smiled a little, knowing he and my mother were watching me from the heavens above.

I sheathed the sword and sling the sheath onto my back. I don't intend to carry it with me in public, because it's a weapon of course, but it's also a very expensive sword. My grandfather once told me that many people worldwide had wanted his sword because of what it's made of. He even told me someone was willing to give him three million dollars for it, but he refused.

It was amazing how expensive this sword was, but it belonged to him, and he kept it because he made it with his heart, and I can feel it within me when I hold it. I will never trade this magnificent blade for anything, not even for all the money and power in the world.

I decided to sit down on the couch and watch some TV. I had nothing better to do, other than me training in the art of karate, MMA and wielding the sword. Nothing in my life was exciting. I missed the good old days with my grandfather. He would always take me on camping trips and teach me how to wield the sword. We would always see the scenery of the forest, hearing the sound of the birds. We even saw a bear cub wrestling with its sibling one time. I'll tell you, it looked so cute and funny even though bears could be dangerous sometimes. I'll never forget those times with my grandfather…

I sighed again and turned off the TV. There was nothing good on, so I decided to pass the time with something else. I pulled out my laptop and turned it on. I then opened up a Icon and started up a game called Minecraft. Minecraft was a game I grew up with. If you don't know, it's a game where you can build almost anything, survive, fight mobs, etc.

Minecraft became a pretty popular game, and many people have been making many videos, and challenges for it. People even created different mods to make the game more entertaining and fun. I go for the computer Minecraft so I can gain access to the mods. I have a lot of mods and games to entertain myself with the game.

As I was going through which mods to add to the game, I saw a new one. It was called Mod Talker. A mod that can allow you to talk to the monsters in the game? What kind of mod is that? I was a little curious to it, but when I pulled up the rate, it nearly made me fall off my chair. The mod had a 4.3 start rate. That's the most popular mod I've ever seen, and its new.

I was more curious about this mod. I pulled up the comments for it, and saw some that have positives to them.

"*This mod is great. Now, I can talk to my favorite monsters."*

"*The mods you talk to are cute anime girls with different personalities."*

"*God, the girls are so sexy. I love this mod."*

"*I like the ones who seduce you, and make the game more entertained."*

Anime girl mobs? Talking to them? sweet talk? Now I know why the mod is popular. Some perverted guy must have made this for his own needs. Disturbing. Still though…it was curious to see what this mod can do. I checked out the price for it, and saw it was for free. However, it had a time limit. It will be on purchase for 10 dollars in a couple of hours. Even though this mod will make me feel like a pervert, I should at least download it and see why it makes it so good.

I clicked the download and burned the mod to my game. When it was complete, I installed it to my game and opened a new world in creative. There was a new torch in the inventory, which was a talking mob torch, which allows me to talk to the mob of my choice. I grabbed it and and took one of the mob eggs, starting with a zombie.

I used the new torch and left click the zombie that I spawned. As a pic opened, colored flashed around my screen and made a long beeping sound. I was shocked, but was quickly replaced with anger.

"You gotta be shitting me!" It was a fucking virus. Dammit! I can't believe this guy would do this to me. Thanks to this new mod, I have a virus in my computer. Great. My own laptop, that I send so much money on, down the drain.

I sighed in sadness and frustration. There was no hope for my computer now. I guess the girls battery has run her course. I was about to close the machine until…

"Wait…"

It was a voice, which sounded like a guy. I looked around and saw no one. I sighed again and closed my laptop. I placed it down and decided to do some training. Little did I know, my laptop flashed a little.

(Timeskip: 9:30 PM)

Night fell quickly. I was tired from the training from my sword and combat skills. Even though I lack from not fighting a real opponent, the dummies did give me the workout I need. I took a warm shower, and had a light dinner. After I ate, I brushed my teeth and went to bed.

However, I couldn't sleep. I tried rolling around to get comfortable, but couldn't. I looked up at my clock and showed 11:03. I was up for around an hour and a half. I guess some warm milk should help, since my grandfather did say warm milk would help me sleep.

I walked into the kitchen and grabbed a glass from a cabin.

SMASH

The sound of glass breaking in the family room took me by surprise and i darted to the source of the sound.

"Hello!?" A flicked the lights on and looked around. No one was there. I wasn't in the mood for this. I grabbed my grandfathers sword and unsheathed it.

"Listen fucker, I ain't joking around! Come out, or I'll force you to come out!" I yelled through my house. Once more, nothing. Only silence.

I wasn't fooled. I knew there was someone in my home. However, a small flash of light caught me from the family room, and it was coming from my laptop. What the fuck? Why is my laptop glowing? This was just getting more an more confusing than ever.

I walked up to my computer and placed my sword down. I opened it and saw the Minecraft open screen up. My laptop was fixed. But how?

Unable to find out my question, something else caught my attention. Below the ext button, there was another one. It was titled…'New Home'. A new icon? That wasn't there before. Curiosity getting the best of me, I clicked it. It opened a pic of Minecraft, and had a detail instructor dialogue.

"**Would you like to start your new home?"**

***Yes**

No

What did this mean, start my new home? Sigh, well I didn't know what it meant, but I just want to get it over with so I can find this fucker and get back to sleep. I clicked 'Yes'.

"**Thank you, Welcome to the world of Minecraft…Daniel Blaze."**

A huge lump shot into my throat, seeing my real first and last name in the dialogue. What the hell is going on!? Did this fucker that made that stupid mod know who I was!? Okay. I had enough. I'm calling the police.

However, as I took two steps back, all the lights that were on immediately shut off. I jumped out of fear, shock and surprise. I grabbed my sword and took stance, ready to face what will happen.

Outside of my window, I saw glowing light, and then coming from my laptop. Suddenly, my computer shot into the air and started glowing brighter.

"What the Shit!?"

I was panicking. I never seen anything like this before. The light from inside and out were continuing to glow brightly, until I couldn't see anything else anymore. I didn't know what was going to happen to me, but I hope I will remain in one piece.

HEEEEEELOOOOOOO EVERYONE! I'm Sonic3461! Those who don't know me, I'm starting a Minecraft story. I hope you all will enjoy it. Also, for those who know me and know my OC, yes, Daniel will be starring in Minecraft now. It will be awesome. To those who know about his powers and so forth will come later on.

Hope you all enjoyed and I'll see you all in the next chapter. Comment, Like and follow for more! ^^

2. Chapter 2

Chapter 2: Welcome to Minecraft

Everything around me felt quiet and…peaceful. The only thing I remember was that weird flash of light and nothing else. I regained my senses and opened my eyes. I was still in my house. I lifted myself up and rubbed my throbbing forehead. I looked around and saw everything looked pretty normal, but the only thing that was gone was my laptop. I guess that light must have blown it up. Damn. There goes all of my games and my money.

I looked out the window. It seemed normal. The blue sky, the smooth breeze, the square clouds and sun, the…wait…WHAT!? I looked again and saw the clouds and sun were squares. I must be hallucinating. I rubbed my eyes, and looked out again. There were still squares and cubes. I rubbed them three more times, but the results were the same. The sun and clouds were still squares and cubs.

I then tried slapping myself awake, and it stung like a bitch. Even with the immense pain, the clouds and sun remained the same. I decided to see the outside for myself. I just hope I wasn't in what I think I'm in. I grabbed the knob of my door an took a deep breath. I opened it and my eyes widened. Everything was in Cubes…the land, the Trees, the Sand, and even the Plants and Grass were in a Cube shape.

Okay, now I know where I am…I'm…in Minecraft. Yep, the game that's one of the most popular of all time. I just can't believe I'm actually here. This is crazy. How can I be inside of a game? Are other people watching me? I hope not. I hate being watched. I was also amazed. This is… actually pretty cool. I mean, I'm in a game, that's one of my favorites. It's actually any gamers dream to be in one of their favorite games.

Anyway, I took a few steps out of my house and looked around the area. It was calm, quiet and peaceful. There were a lot of flowers blooming around the area. It was beautiful. I didn't know how I got here, and why,

but I think I can start living in peace. After all the shit I went through in the past, I think this is the world that I can finally start over a new. Yeah, I can get used to this.

I walked a few more steps out and saw a lake. A few fish jumped out, and some birds were moving around the lake, in hope to catch them. I looked up at the cube sun and saw it was heading to the horizon slowly. Wow, time moves pretty quickly in the game. I headed back to the house, but as I did, a chest with three torches were around the edges. That seriously wasn't there before.

I slowly approached and opened it. Inside, was a book, and a few items. One was a stone pickaxe, a few torches, a wooden axe, three bones and a note. I grabbed the note and read it.

Take these Items and survive in Minecraftia. I'm sorry to have dragged you here all of a sudden, but I need your help. Read the book if you need any assistance on how to survive in this world, but with the skills that I've seen from you, I know you can survive.

I know you must be shocked to have been summoned to Minecraftia, and have no idea, but in time, I will tell you everything that you need to know, but for now, survive and stay safe.

-N

N, huh? Well, whoever he is, I hope he does tell me soon, but for now, I will trust in his words. I gently grabbed the items he left me and held them in my hands. They all vanished in thin air. Knowing that, they must be in my inventory. I tried stroking my hand down in the air, like gamers from *Sword Art Online* do to open their inventory. It worked. My inventory screen opened. All of my items were there. I clicked the book and it popped into my hands. I opened the first page.

Welcome to the World of Minecraft. This book has everything you need to know about the mobs, surviving, creating tools and so much more. Read the indexes to analyze what you need to know.

CHAPTER 1

1-3= Minecraftia Mobs

4-6= Block Collecting

7-8= Crafting Tools

9-10= Crafting Table

11-17= Crafting Blocks Together

18-24= Building Your Home

25-39= Mining in Caves

40-43= Valuable Blocks and Minerals

CHAPTER 2

44-47= How to Tame a Wolf

48-49= Crafting Your Golems

50-52= Red Stone

53-57= Potions and Ingredients

58-59= Villagers and trading

CHAPTER 3

60-61= Nether Portal

62-68= The Nether

69-74= Nether Mobs

CHAPTER 4

75-76= Aether Portal

77-78= The Aether

79-80= Aether Mobs

CHAPTER 5

81-92= The Bosses

93-104= The Princesses and Prince.

Wow. The book has everything I need to know on the game. However what caught my attention was the last bit from the bottom of the page. The Princesses and Prince. There's royalty in the game? Guess this is far different than the game itself.

I placed the book back in my inventory and was about to head back inside, until I heard a dog…or wolf barking. I turned and saw a white wolf with blue eyes. It was looking at me curiously. I love animals, especially dogs and wolves. I took a step forward, and it growled at me.

"Hey, it's okay. I won't hurt you." I calmly replied. The wolf stood its ground and bared its teeth. I guess words won't help. Wait! I have bones.

I opened my inventory again and selected the bones. One popped in my hand. At the sight of the bone, the wolf stopped growling and eyed the white object. I kneeled and gently held out the bone to it. "Come on. I won't hurt you." I gently said to the wolf.

The wolf gently walked up to me, keeping its mind on alert if I tried anything funny. When it got to my hand, it sniffed the bone. It gently grabbed it and gnawed on it a little. I smiled, seeing it act like a regular dog.

It looked up at me and placed the bone back to my feet. It barked. I was confused at first, but realized it wants to give the bone back to me. I smiled and shook my head. "No. You keep it."

The wolf looked back down and them back up to my eyes. It barked and nuzzled my leg. I smiled at the warming moment with this wolf. I gently rose my hand and placed it on its head. The wolf felt my touch and I started stroking the head, moving to the back and repeating the process. The wolf growled lightly in pleasure and sinked into more of my touch. I smiled brighter and scratched its ear, which it seemed to like.

After around a few more pets, It backed away, with the bone in its mouth.

"I hope you and I can see each other again soon. Now, go back to your pack. I'm sure they need to know where you are."

The wolf yipped and walked off with the bone in mouth. Even though I lost one bone, I was still happy I made a new friend. It felt good to have one. And I'm sure he…or she might come back to visit. The sun was now setting faster, and the sunset emerged.

I knew I had to get back to the house. I walked inside, shut the door and locked it. I placed my stuff down and dozed off to sleep on the couch. Tomorrow, I have to get material of I ever want to survive.

(Wolf)

The wolf from before entered the snowy lands, far from the main grasslands of the world. It entered the caves with the bone and yipped. A shadow emerged from the darkness and kneeled.

"What did you find?" Asked the being, with the voice of a female.

The wolf yipped.

"A newcomer? In the grasslands?" She asked surprised.

The wolf barked, explaining what happened.

"I see…" A smile formed on her lips in the darkness. "So he cares about animals, and even wolves." She looked down at the wolf. "Well done. Go and get some rest." The wolf nodded and entered the deep part of the caves.

The being looked out the open mouth of the cave, seeing the snow lightly fall from the sky. She smiled again. "I'll be sure to visit this newcomer soon."

I know this chapter is a little short, but I'll make the next chapter more longer. Also, wow, not even a day and I have 5 faves and 7 follows. Thank you so much. I'll try to update soon. See you all later! ^^

3. Chapter 3

Chapter 3: Prince of Zombies and Princess of Slimes

I woken up after getting some good sleep. Today was a new day. It's time I get started on working on survival in Minecraft.

I got into new adventure clothing. I always wanted to try my most favorite clothes on. It was a black shirt, with a metal shoulder blade, the black jacket was long until it reached my upper feet. Yeah, this Kiritos clothing from SAO. What? This clothing is badass.

I packed up my tools, a few bits of food and water, and my sword. I grabbed my backpack and flung it on my back, along with my sword. After making sure I had everything, I locked up and left.

I realized the chest was closed and saw the sign 'MAP'. I opened it and found a map of the world and another note. I picked it up and read it.

I apologize for not giving you a map yesterday. I hope this map can come in handy. It's also enchanted, so you can find your homes and villages more quicker. Stay safe, Daniel.

-N

I smiled a little and grabbed the map, until it vanished. I checked the inventory and saw it in one of the slots.

"Okay, time to get to work." I selected my axe and started chopping wood. I chopped a few trees, until I had two stacks of wood. I looked up and saw it was noon.

"Okay, I got wood, but how am I gonna change it to wooden planks?" I pondered for a bit, until I had an idea. I selected the stack and took one piece of wood. "Okay, let's see if this works." I clutched the wood hard in my fist, until I heard a popping sound. I opened my palm and saw 4 planks in my hands.

"Sweet!" I repeated the process until I had 4 stacks of wooden planks. Taking one, I place half of the stack and placed them next to one another. The planks moved until they turned into sticks. I made two stacks of sticks and placed them in my inventory. And with my bag, I have a lot of slots ready to be used.

The next I needed was coal. If I need to make torches, I need coal, not to mention to make food. I walked further away from my house, until I reached a cave. It looked pretty deep, but I did see some coal ore. Moving quickly I entered and used my stone pickaxe. I broke the ore and collected the minerals. As I did, green orbs appeared and swirled around me. These were experience orbs. They will come in handy for enchanting later.

GROWL

Oh shit. I knew that growl anywhere. It was a Zombie. I quickly turned and saw a green fleshed zombie moaning and walking towards me with his hands out. I was scared, facing off against a real zombie. I knew from one bite, I'm finished. I gotta kill it quickly.

I pulled out my sword and charged, and slashed the head clean off. The zombie fell tot he ground and poofed into dust and left experience points. After collecting what I need, I used the coal I collected and made torches. I made a stack, and used the rest of the ore for later. I took one out and lit up the area. The cave looked a little bigger if I moved further.

I didn't have any armor to protect myself but I had my sword. As long as if I can kill it quickly, I should be fine, but I also need to watch my footing. One slip into a trent, or in lava, I'm as good as dead.

I moved further into the caves, placing a few torches down, as I went further.

Bones rattling

I quickly turned around and saw a Skeleton approaching me with its crossbow. It pulled an arrow back and fired.

"SHIT!" I managed to dodge the arrow in time and took cover behind a rock.

Slurpy sounds

"Goddammit." I growled under my breath. I knew that sound. I looked up and saw a spider, as big as a dog above me. I really hate spiders, but big ones, is a different story. The spider jumped down and headed for me.

I pulled up my sword and the spider landed in the blade, head first. It hissed in pain, until it died. Like usual, the spider blasted into smoke and dropped experience orbs.

Apparently, I wasn't paying attention to my surroundings and forgot about the Skeleton that was trying to kill me. I felt a strong level of pain shoot into my shoulder. I screamed in pain, and held my shoulder. It was an arrow that was pierced deep into my shoulder. I looked back and saw the Skeleton pulling another bow back, ready to fire again.

I felt anger rush into my blood. One thing you all need to know, when I get hurt by my enemies, I get angry easily. Remember that.

I roared and charged at the skeleton. It fired another arrow, but using my sword skills, i deflected the arrow, and continued to charge. The skeleton panicked and was pulling out another arrow, but I sliced its arms off. Its rectangular arms popped off. I was far from done. I sliced its head off, and the skull fell. The body fell to the ground and exploded, leaving one arrow and a few experience orbs.

I sighed and looked at the arrow in my shoulder. I knew this was gonna suck, but the arrow had to come out, one way or another. I gently grasped it, and with a swift pull, I took it out. However, I yelled in

immense pain. The screams were enough to drag the attention of two more zombies and one skeleton near me.

"I hate mobs." I growled. I had to get outta here. I can't risk getting bitten or another arrow in the shoulder or the head. I turned and ran off. As I ran, I left some torches to light up the area, so I can find my way out when the mobs leave. However, my running time came to an end. I skid and saw I was at a trench. It was a long way down. I can see lava, and water everywhere.

"Dammit! Come on, Daniel. Think, think, think." I quickly looked around to find a way out, until I spotted a mine shaft a few blocks away to my right.

"Yes!" I quickly took out my pickaxe and started mining I got to at least two blocks deep, I took out some of the cobblestone I collected and blocked the entrance to the hole I made. I heard the bones rattling and zombie moan, trying to find me.

I sighed in exhaustion and sat down for a bit to regain my breath. I took another look at my wound to make sure it wasn't infected. What surprised me is the wound wasn't that deep or open anymore. Sure, there was a scratch and a little bit of blood, but it doesn't look as bad as it was before. I guess I also gained slow regeneration abilities like in the game. I should still be careful though. I mined until I made it to the clearing of the mine shaft.

The shaft had a lot of coal ore and some iron ore, even a little red dust ore. I lighted up the area and started mining. I collected 8 iron ore, 23 coal, and 26 red dust. I got a good handful of cobblestone as well. While digging, I also came across gravel and dug some up as well. I got a little flint, and I tossed the gravel once I got what I need.

Taking the time I have, I placed four planks down and created a crafting table. I placed it down and opened it. I placed 8 cobblestone around the slots and created a furnace. After placing it down, I threw in three coal

and the iron ore I collected. I stood next tot he furnace, waiting for my ore to create ingots.

As I waited, I ate some of my energy bars and drank some water. I pulled out my headphones and IPhone and started playing some music as I waited. Wondering how I got the IPhone, I had it with me in my bad the entire time.

After around 8 minutes, I pulled out my earbuds and checked the furnace. All of the ingots were there, ready to be used. I took the ingots and placed them in the inventory. The results gave me experience orbs.

I placed my crafting table down and used the ingots to create iron armor. Only enough to make a chest plate. After it was made, I placed it on and tested it. It wasn't heavy, but looked pretty thick and strong. Using the coal and red dust, I created 2 coal and red dust blocks. This will make carry composite easier. After upgrading my equipment and collecting the sources I need, I decided to head out to head deeper, but then something caught my attention.

"Hold still, bitch!"

"Let me go!"

It sounded like a boy and…a girl. I placed my bag on and ran down the caves of the mines. I used one torch to keep light on while I ran down the caves. The screams and yelling got louder and I knew I was getting closer.

(Warning: Minor Rape scene up ahead)

I turned a corner, but jumped back and looked carefully. What I saw shocked me.

A girl, around 19 was being forced to the wall against a boy, who was 20.

The girl was light green, while wearing a forest green dress, hugging her hour glass curved body. She had emerald green eyes, E-Cup sized breasts and wore a hat with three green blocks, making it look like a face.

The man looked like to be a zombie. He has dark brown hair, green rotten skin, a blue ripped shirt and pants. He also had red glowing eyes.

I was shocked that these two looked like humans, but there was something off about them. Well, for one, the guy is a zombie, but he can talk, and the girl had green skin, so I know they're not human, but who are they?

"You're driving on my patience, Gel!" The zombie man growled in anger.

"Let me go, Rot!" The women, now named Gel shouted in panic.

Before I could step in, I saw some zombies and Skeletons approaching. I didn't have time, but I have to kill them, so I can figure out what was going on. I pulled out my sword again and started killing them one at a time. While fighting them, I continued to listen on their conversation.

"I've been ignored by you princesses for the last time! Just because I'm a zombie, doesn't mean you all have the right to avoid me!" Rot yelled in anger.

"Neither of us want to be with you, because you will only treat us as slaves, and only care for yourself!" Gel yelled, trying to break free from his iron grip.

Wait…these guys were the royalty I read about in the book? I guess that would make sense to why they're arguing.

Rot yelled and bashed her against the wall again. Gel was now terrified.

"If neither princess will accept me, and be with me, THEN I'LL TAKE YOU BY FORCE!" He grabbed her dress and ripped it off, exposing her naked figure.

"NO! PLEASE STOP!" Gel screamed.

I killed the last zombie and ran back to the scene, but I was shocked me and made my stomach turned.

Rot ignored her crying pleads and kneeled her breasts. He smirked evilly, feeling her tits pressed against his rotten hands.

"You're such a fucking slut, you slimy whore." Rot chomped on her right breast and sucked hard.

The green girl screamed in both pain and slight pleasure. She didn't want this at all, and was being violated.

I myself wasn't liking this at all. I was sickened. Sudden memories from my past filled my mind.

"*NO! DON'T, PLEASE!"*

"*Shut up little bastard!"*

"*NO! NOT IN THERE! AAAAAAAAAAAAAH!"*

"*Haha! Look at this little cocksucker! Ur! His ass it so tight!"*

"*Keep sucking little bastard!"*

My fists tightened and I growled fiercely. If there was one thing I hate more than bullies and killers, it's rapists.

Rot rolled her around and slammed her against the wall. Keeping her there, he pressed his own body against hers.

"You're mine now, bitch." He started undoing his pants.

This was getting out of hand. It's time to end this nightmare.

"Get ready for a good fucking from the Prince of Zo-" He was cut off quickly and everything around Gel stopped. She slowly looked and saw my foot connected to his rotten jaw. Her eyes widened.

"What?" It was all she asked.

Rot blasted off away from her and crashed into a wall, causing cobblestone to explode everywhere.

(Minor Rape end)

Gel looked back up at me, with a very pissed off face, fists tightened and fire roaring in my eyes. Her own eyes widened in shock, seeing myself before her, and she was also shocked that I saved her from getting raped.

"Get going..." I growled lowly.

"Huh?"

"Get outta here. I'll handle this dick face." I responded.

She didn't respond, but she got the message. She carefully got away from me and hid behind the walls of the area.

Rot slowly got up and adjusted his jaw until it was connected again. He looked up at me, never seeing anything like me before, but he growled angrily.

"How dare you interrupt my time of glory, for fucking mob!" He yelled.

"HOW DARE YOU, YOU FUCKING PIECE OF SHIT! HOW DARE YOU TRY TO RAPE THAT GIRL! YOU HAVE NO HEART, AND ARE JUST A FUCKING MONSTER!" I roared.

"I'll make sure my henchmen feast on your Caracas." He snapped his fingers and summoned a dozen zombies.

"Try all you want, in the end you'll still die." I coldly responded, pulling out my sword.

"Feast upon him, my henchmen." Rot commanded. The zombies moaned and charged at surprisingly fast speed.

I roared and charged in. I slashed my sword around, slicing each head off every zombie. One zombie grabbed my blade, but I maneuvered the blade up and slicked the hands off clean. I did a horizontal slash and killed it immediately.

Rot growled in anger and summoned more zombies. They all came at me, but with my anger blinding me, I ignored my fears and charged in.

Gel, who was at the walls, watched the battle in awe and amazement. This creature, not only saved her from Rot, but is actually holding his own ground against him and his army. Who was he, and what is he?

A zombie grabbed me by the arm and was ready to sink its teeth into, but no way In hell that's gonna happen. I twisted my body and threw it away from me. It flew and crashed into its buddies.

"Stop hiding behind you goons like a pussy and fight me, you coward!" I yelled at Rot.

That was the motivation he needed to fight. "ME!? A COWARD!? THAT'S IT! I'LL KILL YOU MYSELF!" He snapped his fingers and summoned a golden sword.

"Bring it on, dick head!" I yelled and we charged at one another. Our swords clashed and we glared at each other deeply. We jumped back and charged again, with our blades clashing again and again.

Rot punched me in the face hard and I grabbed my face in pain. He charged and slashed his sword against my chest, making me scream in pain and fall to the ground. He smirked evilly.

"Come on. Is the best you can do? I'm just getting started." He held the blade to his lips and licked my blood off. As the red liquid made contact with his tongue, his eyes shot open in shock. "Your blood…" He looked at me, until a crazy smile formed on his lips. "Your blood is delicious!" He the laughed like a maniac. "I'm gonna enjoy feasting on your flesh once I kill you!"

He dashed forward again, with new temptation to kill me. I held my blade up and stopped his attack, but he was moving faster and slashed at me again, making me fall to the ground. He licked the blood off and was now drooling.

"Your blood tastes magnificent! It tastes so good, I can just lose myself in it!" I growled and slowly got up. "Hmhmhm. Once I finish feasting upon you, I will have the energy I need to find Gel and fuck her until she passes out."

Gel gasped in fear, but I was growling.

"Shut up." I got to my feet and glared angrily at the zombie prince. "She is not your fuck toy. She is not a piece of property you owe! She is not your slave!" I pointed ta him. "If you want to get to her, You'll have to get passed me! I will fight to the bitter end, and even if this battle breaks every bone in my body, I will keep her safe, even if it means giving up my life for her!"

Gel gasped in shock by his words. He put a lot of heart and passion into every word he spoke. What he said was the truth, meaning he was willing to die to keep her safe.

Rot smirked. "That can be arranged, you pathetic hero." He roared and charged at me, with blade ready to slice through my heart. I braced myself for impact.

Suddenly, a large green barrier appeared in front of me and protected me from the attack and sent Rot back.

"What?" The barrier shifted and it was a slime that protected me. Out of shock and surprise, Gel came out of nowhere and stood by my side.

"What are you doing here? You're supposed to get to safety." I said firmly.

"I don't care." I was startled by her answer, until her emerald eyes locked onto my sapphire eyes. "Even when the odds are stacked against you, you still keep getting up and kept fighting. You are willing to give your life to keep me safe, and keep me safe." She looked back at Rot. "Which is why, I will stand up and fight along side you and fight against this sad excuse of a prince!"

Rot smiled. "So, the slimy whore has returned. Perfect, you made my job so much easier. Once I kill this freak, I'll fuck you hard, my dear.

I growled. *"I gotta kill him somehow, but no matter what I try, he'll just counter."* I looked at my sword. *"Man, I wish I had a fire enchantment on my blade."* Then, my eyes shot open. *"That's it!"*

"Gel!" The green girl looked back at me. "I need you to hold him off for 30 seconds! I have an idea!"

She smiled and nodded. "Of course." She glared at the rotten prince, who was smirking. She yelled and charged at him.

I quickly pulled dup my inventory and selected my crafting table. I placed it down and started crafting.

"*Oh, please let this work."* I took out the two coal blocks and placed a stick down. Nothing moved, until they vibrated and merged into a coal sword.

Gel tried punching Rot, but dodged the attacks with ease. He poked her in the chest, teasing her. "Such an amazing body you have Gel."

"Shut up!" She fired goo from her hand, but Rot moved at high speed and dodged her attacks.

"Yes!" I took the next step of my plan. Took out the flint from before and crafted it together with an iron ingot. They merged into a flint and steel. I rose my head up and sheathed my blade.

"Okay, I'm ready!" I shouted and charged. Gel looked back at me. "Switch out!" She quickly moved out of the way and I readied my coal sword.

"Hahahaha! You think that coal sword can defeat me!? You're just wasting time, fool!" I ignored him and took out my flint and steel. With a quick strike, the sword was set a blaze in fire.

"WHAT!?" Rot wasn't able to react to the sudden change and I sliced his arm off with the sword. he screamed in pain and stumbled back, holding his shoulder, which was oozing with blood and was burning.

Gel looked at the blazing sword in awe and shock. *"Incredible. He actually created a sword that can catch on fire. He used the coal blocks as the base and the flint and steel as the lighter. He thought outside the box and created something new. He's…amazing."*

I charged in and yelled, while slashing and swinging my blade around, dealing major damage to the rotten zombie. He punched Rot hard and send him flying at the wall. He exploded in the smoke and he blasted out of it, heading for me, with the blade in his other hand.

"DIIIIIIIIIE!" He slashed the sword around, but I blocked and countered. I swiped my blade up and stabbed him in the chest. He screamed in pain as I pushed him back. He yelled in both anger and pain as he grabbed my head and pushed it back, raising his sword to finish me off.

I grunted and slashed the blade out of his hands.
"HAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAAA!" With one final powerful slash, I sliced him into two. He screamed in pain and agony, as his body was sliced in half. Then, he exploded in dust and experience points.

Everything around us fell silent. The only thing that was heard was the sound of my heavy panting.

"Is…is it….over?" I quietly questioned, until I fell into darkness and collapsed.

(Unknown Location)

Somewhere in Minecraftia, a man was watching him through a screen.

"Simply outstanding. He created a new weapon from material that has never been thought of." He smiled, stroking his beard. "This boy will do many wonders, and I know he will stop him."

"You think he can do it, N?" A shadowy figure approached him.

"I know he will. After all, his kind heart and strength is what makes him a strong warrior." He answered.

"Still though, he will need more if he ever wants to defeat your brother."

"I know, which is why I will guide him to where he needs to be. It is time for him to be their new successor."

The shadow figure gasped. "Wait…you mean…"

N nodded. "Yes. Now, send word to them, and bring them here."

The being nodded and left the man alone. He turned back and looked at the horizon of the cube sun. "Brother…I hope you're ready, because I have found my champion."

(Daniel)

My eyes slowly opened, and my body felt very weak. I looked around to where I was. I was still in a cave, but I was covered in a blanket made of wool. My wounds have ben bandaged, and there were a few torches around the small room.

"Oh, you're finally awake." I looked and saw the girl from before, which I believe her name is Gel. She was carrying a cup and approached me. "I'm so relieved, you're up. I was worried you might never."

"How long was I out?" I asked.

"Four days at best." She answered.

Four days I was sleeping!? Well, time does move pretty quickly in the game. I slowly lifted myself up in a sitting position, which Gel helped me with.

"Here." She held the cup, filled with a hot beverage. "Drink this. It should help with the pain."

Even though I was happy she was safe, I still didn't know if I should, but my body was aching.

"Go on." She gently pushed the cup closet to my lips.

Sighing in defeat, I pushed my lips onto the cup and started drinking the beverage. It tasted a little bitter, but nothing to bad. As soon as the liquid reached my stomach, the aching feeling in my body was fading.

"You should take it easy for a while. Until you feel no more pain, you should rest." Gel said.

"Okay. Thank you."

Gel smiled and shook her head. "I believe I'm the one should be thanking you. If you never never showed up, Rot would have had his ways with me. Even though you and I don't know each other, you still protected me, even by facing death."

I smiled a little. "Well, I can't just let a rotten bastard like him harm a sweet girl like you."

Gel's cheeks became dark green, indicating she was blushing. She smiled. "You're very sweet. Also, we never got to introduce each other."

I smiled back. "Yeah. My name is Daniel Blaze, but you can call me Daniel."

"That's a very nice name. My name is Gel, Princess of the Slimes." She greeted.

"It's very nice to meet you, Gel."

Gel sat next to me. "If you don't mind me asking, what kind of Mob are you? You look like a zombie, but your skin is fresh and you look very clean?"

I chuckled. "To answer, I'm not really a mob. I'm a human."

Gel gasped in shock. "That's…impossible. You're actually a real human?"

"I would never lie about anything, Gel." I said. "Are humans, sort of like legends in Minecraftia?"

"Yes. There have ben stories and legends about humans, but there hasn't ben sighting of not even one."

"Well, there's one here now."

Gel smiled. "This is crazy, saved by a human. I never thought that would be possible."

I gently patted her on the head. "Anything is possible, Gel. It just takes time for something to become reality."

She looked into my eyes and smiled. She then leaned in and kissed me on the cheek. My body went stiff and my cheeks turned bright crimson.

"A little thank you, for saving me…my hero."

I chuckled and rubbed my head. "I'm not a hero. I only do what I believe is right."

"You're a hero in my eyes."

"Thanks, Gel."

"Anyway, you should rest. The sun must have set right about now."

"Yeah. Well, goodnight, Gel."

"Goodnight, Daniel."

I laid against the wool cube and slowly closed my eyes, falling asleep.

Gel watched the young human sleep, his breathing rising and falling slowly. She would have never thought she would be here, in a cave, alone with a human, let alone one who was kind, brave, and also cute.

Gel yawned and without thinking, laid next to him, watching his face in peaceful slumber. She smiled and scooted closer to him, until her head was resting against his, and her body was under the wool blanket. She listened to the soft beatings of his heart, and the warmth he let off.

She blushed, but smiled in bliss and nuzzled closer to him.

"So warm." She sighed happily and fell asleep.

Little did she know, I was still awake. I watched her sleep in bliss. I was blushing like an idiot, but smiled. Even though I never had a girl sleep next to me before, it was a warmth in my heart that it welcomed. I felt happy, and at peace.

I carefully rose my arm and wrapped it around her green body, and stroked her hair slowly. She smiled and nuzzled closer.

"Sleep well, Gel." I whispered and fell back to sleep.

Awwwwwwwwww. That was sweet. I loved this chapter, and I hope you all do as well. I gotta say, everyone. Only a day, and i have 12 faves and 19 follows. I'm shocked. I never gotten this many faves and follows in just one day from a new story, but I'm happy about it.

Also, I have an opportunity for you all. If some of you wish to give me a hand with this story, with helping me make it, I will be happy with that. You will need Google Doc if you want to help. If you're interested, PM me and we'll take from there.

Anyways, thank you all for reading. Fave, follow and comment for more. See you next time in the next update! ^^

4. Chapter 4

Chapter 4: The Slime Kingdom

I slowly woke up from my slumber. That was actually a very comfortable place to sleep. I noticed that it was daytime so the mobs are probably gone.

As I came to my senses, I noticed a slimy body next to mine. Of course, it was Gel, with her arms wrapped around me, with her head resting on my chest. My cheeks went bright crimson but I smiled.

I shook her shoulder ever so slightly.

"Gel, it's time to wake up." I whispered softly.

She nuzzled into me, refusing to wake up.

"Come on, Gel. It's morning."

Finally, she stirred and slowly opened her emerald eyes. She yawned and looked up at me.

"Morning sleeping beauty." I joked smiling.

She kept staring into my eyes for a bit, until she looked at what she was holding on to. At that, her eyes snapped open wide, and her face burst into a deep shade of green. She quickly let go of me and scooted back.

"I-I-I I'm so sorry, Daniel. I didn't mean to hold you while you were sleeping. You were just so warm, and-wait! No! That's not what I mean! I-I mean...I…"

I chuckled and patted her head. "It's okay, Gel. I don't mind you sleeping with me." That's when my face turned red. "Well, not in THAT way. I mean, sleeping next to me."

The burning blush on her cheeks lessened. "So...you don't mind if I cuddle with you?"

I smiled and shook my head. "I don't mind one bit, but to be honest, I never had someone sleep next to me...except for…" Memories of my mother seeped in and I felt tears forming.

"Daniel, what's wrong?" The girl asked concerned.

"Uh." I wiped the forming tears from my eyes. "It's nothing, Gel. Don't worry."

"If you need to talk to someone, you know I'll be here for you."

I blushed at her kind words. "Thanks Gel. I needed that."

She smiled and stood up. "How are you feeling?"

I checked myself, and felt no pain, whatsoever. "I feel a lot better. Still though, thanks for healing me."

"It's the least I can do for what you did for me."

I slowly stood up and stretched, making sure I feel no pain from the attacks and from my battle from Rot. "Well, at least that bastard is dead now. One thing we won't have to worry about."

Gel frowned a little. "Well, it's not that simple, i'm afraid."

"What do you mean?"

"You see, Rot and ourselves can die, but we cannot be truly defeated. Whenever we die, we get spawned back to our kingdoms by our fathers." Gel explained.

"Great. Guess we'll be seeing him again soon." I crossed my arms and looked down. "I just hope his dad gives him a good smack to the face after pulling that stunt yesterday."

"I hope so too."

That was when something pricked in my mind. "Speaking of Kingdoms, doesn't your father know you've been gone for a while now?"

Gels eyes widened in shock. "Oh shit! I was supposed to return back home yesterday! Oh man, my father's gonna kill me!"

"Hey, relax." I placed a comforting hand on her shoulder. "I'm sure your father will understand too why you didn't return home."

"You really think so?"

I smiled. "Of course. Your father loves you, and he cares about you. If you explain to him about the situation, I'm sure he'll understand."

Gel smiled again. "You're always one to make someone smile, Daniel."

"I usually try."

"Hey, I have a great idea. How about you come with me to the slime Kingdom?"

"What? Are you sure?"

Gel giggled. "Of course. I'm sure my father will like you." She dug into her dress and pulled out a small slime. She dropped it to the ground and the slime expanded. Gel stepped into the slime and smiled at me.

"Is the slime some kind of teleportation device?" I questioned.

"Mhm. This will take us to the kingdom no time flat. Come on."

I carefully stepped into the slime and Gel grabbed my hand.

"One thing to let you know, you might want to hold your breath." Gel mentioned.

"Right." Considering I wasn't part slime, breathing the goo would be a bad idea. I took a deep breathe and the held it. The slime rose and covered the two of us in green go. Then, we started sinking into the floor.

I was starting to freak out by the way we were teleporting, but Gel calmly hugged me, keeping me from struggling. I relaxed into her hug and waited.

The slime around us moved pretty quickly around the world, but now a new problem occured...I was running low on air.

My face started turning blue, and I was struggling again. Gel saw this and then grabbed my face. Without even a warning, Gel pressed her lips against mine.

My face froze, eyes widened and my face turned different shades of red. Shocking me more, Gel opened my mouth and surprisingly breathed oxygen into my lungs. How the hell can she have oxygen in the slime? Does she absorb the oxygen from the slime into her body? Whatever the case, I was grateful I wasn't gonna die. I hate the feeling of death when you can't breathe.

The slime came to a stop, and the slime vanished around us. Before I could even move, Gel wrapped her arms around me and pulled me closer to the kiss. I felt her tongue explore my mouth, and her throat let off small throaty moans.

I never kissed a girl in my life, and this felt...strangely okay. She wasn't human, but again, she did look like one a little, not to mention her lips did feel pretty soft against mine. No! I have to control myself.

I gently pulled away, saliva connecting to our mouths, and Gel panted.

"Gel, you okay?"

She looked back up at me. Her emerald eyes glittering with what was peace, a dreamy trance and even...lust. She quickly came back to her senses and realized what she did. Her face turned different shades of green and she backed away.

"I-I-I'm so sorry! I'm sorry! I'm sorry!" She blurted out.

"Hey, take it easy." I pulled her into another hug. She blushed, but calmed in my arms. "It's okay. You only did that to keep me alive." I looked down at her. "But, why did you pull me closer and kiss me harder?"

She didn't look into my eyes and buried her head into my chest. "I...never kissed a boy before. When I felt your lips against mine, I felt so happy, and...well...the feeling of your tongue, and the taste of your mouth, I couldn't control myself. I'm sorry."

"Hey, like I said, it's okay." I stroked her hair, which started to calm her. "There are times when we can't control our bodies and what we think. We just have to keep ourselves in control."

Gel finally looked back up at me. "So...does this mean...you like my kiss?"

It was my turn to blush. "Well….it was good. Not gonna lie, it felt...nice."

She smiled and kissed my cheek. "You're very sweet."

"Not to mention that was my first kiss."

"That was your first?" She asked surprised.

"Yeah. I've never been in a relationship before, and I never knew what kissing a girl would feel like. What about you?"

Her face turned green again. "Well...my first kiss was...with my niece."

"Your niece?"

"There hasn't been a guy seen for many years in Minecraftia, and many of us princesses have gone bisexual, so we could please each other and not feel lonely."

My face burned red. "Does...this mean you're…"

She blushed deeply. "Y...yes...I'm bisexual as well."

A lot of dirty thoughts swam in my mind, but I shook my head to keep myself from losing it.

We walked down a path for a bit, until we arrived at the slime kingdom, and I was amazed. There were tens of thousands of slimes hopping around the kingdom, each one having different colors. Other than the slime cubes, there were also a bunch of slime girls, that looked like Gel. There were a few that looked younger than the adults. Some looked about 10 to 12, some up to 14 and 15, and the others around Gel or my age. A lot of them were eyeing me. Some were blushing, some were whispering to each other, and a lot of them were shyly waving at me.

"Are all slimes here females?" I asked Gel.

"Yes, the only male slime in the kingdom is my father." Gel answered.

I then saw a pair of two 20 year old slimes, they had sly smiles and blew me kisses. The action made me blush, and I smiled nervously at them. Gel's face got very green about that and gave the two girls a death stare.

They reached the castle door, only to be stopped by two slime guards. One red and one purple.

"Your highness, you've returned." The purple silme said.

"But, who is this… outsider?" The red slime asked looking at me.

"Hello. My name is Daniel Blaze." I greeted.

"He's my guest. In fact, I owe him my life. He saved me from Prince Rot." Gel said with disgust on the when she said Rot name.

"What did he do to you?" The purple slime asked.

Gel didn't want to bring back those bad moments to what Rot did to her. "I rather not talk about it." she said in a very sad tone.

The slimes looked at one another, until they looked back at us. "Well, you may enter, and you may enter as well, Mr. Daniel." The red one said.

They nodded and the two opened the door, with the pair entering the castle. As Gel and I walked through the two giant doors, we entered the throne room, and saw the king, who was green, like Gel. He was wearing a green tunic with gold linings. A green crown was on top of his head, with an emerald in the center.

"Gel, thank goodness you came back." The king walked down and hugged her daughter.

"I'm sorry for worrying you, father." Gel said hugging her dad back.

"Well, I'm just grateful you're safe." The king then looked at me. "And who is this young man?"

"This is a friend I made in the Caverns. He ran into me underground, in the mines. In fact, he also saved my life."

"Oh? And what did he do?" The king asked.

"Well...Prince Rot….he...he was…" Gel tried to explain to him what happened, but she was both disgusted and scared.

"Prince Rot was raping your daughter, sir." I stepped in.

The king's face shattered into shock and anger, upon hearing what the Prince of Zombies did to her.

"HE DID WHAT!? Why that rotten little…" His face started going red surprisingly.

"Father, remember your blood pressure." Gel noted to him.

He looked at his daughter and started to calm down. He took some breaths and relaxed.

"I'm okay, Gel." The king looked at me with a smile. "Young man, no words can thank you for protecting my daughter from that rotten bastard."

I smiled and placed a hand over my heart. "It was no problem your majesty. I was lucky I went into the mines and found your daughter. I was more than happy to help her anyway in my power."

The king chuckled. "A very noble young man as well. Tell me lad, what's your name?"

I smiled. "My name is Daniel Blaze, your majesty." I greeted bowing.

"A fine name you have. If you don't mind me asking, what kind of mob are you? You do look like a zombie, but you know, more alive."

"He's actually a human, dad." Gel pipped in.

The king looked at me in surprise. "You're a human?"

I chuckled. "I would not lie to royalty, especially to your daughter."

"By Notch, this changes everything." The elder slime looked at her daughter with a smile. "Gel, you certainly have found a remarkable young man."

"D-Daddy! He's not my boyfriend!" The slime girl stuttered blushing.

The king laughed. "You may think like that, but one day, you'll be the happiest slime girl that ever lived."

Gel's cheeks puffed out and she huffed.

The king chuckled and looked back at me. "Daniel, I would like to thank you again for my daughter. I believe you deserve a reward for your heroism."

I smiled and waved my hand. "I appreciate the reward, but I don't need it."

"No?" The king was surprised by my answer, along with Gel.

"Nope. I don't help others out of getting rewards or money, I do it out of the goodness of my heart, and am willing to help out any way I can. Your daughter's smile and thanks is enough of a reward for me."

Both were loss at words by what I told them, until the king laughed once again.

"Kind, brave, and also very humble. You never see to surprise me my boy."

"Are you sure? You've done so much for me and you also laid your life on the line for me." Gel said, feeling a little bad.

"Don't worry, Gel. I request nothing in return." I said.

"You may not accept a reward, so how about I throw you a feast?" The king offered.

"That's a great idea, dad." Gel smiled.

"Are you sure it's no trouble? I don't want to impose?" I asked.

The king laughed again. "I truly insist my boy. Besides, I'm sure you must be hungry from your travels."

My stomach growled loudly at the mention of food. I blushed in embarrassment, and the two giggled and chuckled.

"I'll take that as a yes."

I smiled a little. "I appreciate this. Thank you, your majesty."

He chuckled. "Now, now. No need for the formality anymore from you my boy. Just call me Slush."

I smiled and nodded. "Okay...Slush."

"There you go. Now, come with me you two."

We followed Slush up the stairs of his castle and up to a balcony. It got a great view of the kingdom, despite it being close for the slimes to see us.

"Attention citizens of the Slime Kingdom! May have your attention!" Slush called out.

The slimes around the area gathered around, as Slush continued.

"Just yesterday, my daughter, Princess Gel, has been attacked by the Prince of Zombies, Rot!"

The crowd gasped in shock.

"Not only that, he was planning on taking my flesh and slime to make her his own!"

They gasped again, and some were pretty angry.

"That rotten bastard!"

"How dare he do that to our precious princess!"

"Let me at'em!"

"Now, now! I understand you all are upset at him, more than I am!"

The crowd calmed.

"However, one heroic, and brave lad has saved my daughter from certain doom, from the rotting hands of the prince!"

The crowd muttered to one another.

"I would like all of you to welcome our kingdoms hero, the warrior that saved my daughter, Daniel Blaze!"

I stepped forward so the crowd can see me. They all gasped at the sight of me, while many were saying.

"He's a boy!"

"Oh my Notch! He's so cute!"

"Cute? He looks so hot!"

I blushed embarrassingly, while Slush laughed and Gel glaring at the girls who were eyeing him.

"Quite the lady catcher you are, my boy." Slush whispered.

"Uhhh...y-yeah. I think so."

He chuckled. "Now then, for his heroic deeds, we shall celebrate his honor, with a feast!"

The crowd cheered.

"Now, everyone make the best meals you can make and we'll begin!" The slime girls took off and began preparing for the feast.

"Now, as for you, Daniel," Slush turned to me. "How about we get something more...fancy for the feast?"

"You sure? This is all I have." I looked at my dirty SAO clothes.

Slush chuckled. "Not to worry. I have some smaller outfits that might fit. Now, come with me, and Gel, wear something that will wow the village."

"Yes, father." Gel ran off to her room to get a dress.

"Come with me." Slush said, and I went off with him.

A few minutes later, we arrived at a wardrobe, possibly his, and he opened it and started looking through his outfits. Until he found one that caught my eye as well.

The tuxedo was black, had sapphire blue streaks, and was white at the arms' edges. It also had a dark crimson tie, and black pants. He also had black shoes along with black socks.

"What do you think, Daniel?" Slush asked me.

"It's perfect." I said. He handed the outfit over to me.

"There's a changing room over there." he said, pointing at a door. I thanked him and changed into the outfit. I walked out of the changing room and not only Slush was there but I saw Gel too. After she had a good look at me she blushed deeply.

"Look at you, Daniel. A fine, handsome young man in that suit. The ladies will be all over you when they get a load of your new style." Slush smiled.

I chuckled sheepishly while rubbing my head.

(Zombie Kingdom)

Far away, in a kingdom known as the Zombie Kingdom, a certain Prince, was not happy. No, he was furious.

Rot roared and threw furniture, bit hard into his food and growled. He couldn't believe that was defeated by an unknown creature, and took

away a princess he was so close to making his own. How dare that mob! If he ever sees him again, he'll shred him and feast on his flesh.

"I'll make them pay. I'll make sure they pay dearly for this!" He growled as he bit deeply into his chicken.

He wanted revenge. He wants to make the mob pay and get his hands on Gel.

Then, something popped into his rotten brain. It was a plan that will conquer all of his evil plans. A small evil smile formed on his lips, until he chuckled, then bellowed into evil laughter.

It was time to set up his new master plan.

(Slime Kingdom)

"Let the celebration, Begin!" Slush announced uncorking a bottle of wine.

Confetti blew and the slimes all cheered. Music played and many of the slime girls and cubes started dancing. The rest of us were feasting, including myself.

The food...was amazing. Every bite of steak, potatoes, anything, is making my mouth water.

"Enjoying yourself, my boy?" Slush asked biting into a steak.

"I sure am. This food is amazing. This beats all the food I had from before." I took another bite into my pork chop.

"Get used to it, my boy, because this is how the food tastes in Minecraftia."

"Really? Sweet." If just cooking the food will only taste like this, this world has blown my mind again.

As I bit down into my apple, I realized I felt something slimy rub against my leg. I looked down and saw a slime cube, a cyan colored one, was looking at me. As a another surprise, it has sapphire blue eyes, like mine.

Before I could even ask, the slime cube jumped onto my lap, shocking me. Its eyes formed into an eye smile and nuzzled into my lap.

"Huh?" That was the only word that came out of my mouth.

"Awwww, I think he likes you, Daniel." Gel cooed, seeing the little cube lying in my lap happily.

"Do slime cubes act like this?" I asked.

"Of course. Slime cubes make perfect pets for us slime girls. They are such sweethearts." She explained.

I looked down at the cube again, until a small smile formed and I softly stroked its head. It felt a little weird, but it was smooth and not really slimy. The little cube felt my soft touch and nuzzled closer to me, enjoying the effection.

Slush laughed. "Looks like the little cube has taken a big liking to you, my boy."

"I guess it does." I smiled.

"When a slime cube shows affection to someone, like what the little guy right now, it means he wants you to be his owner."

"Really? You don't mind if I keep him?" I questioned in surprise.

Slush smiled. "Of course not. I can tell he really likes you."

I looked down at the little slime cube, who was looking at me, and giving me puppy eyes. Oh my god, it looked so adorable. How can I refuse such an offer to this little guy?

"I'll be more than happy to take care of him, Slush." The little cube jumped up and down happily on my lap, happy to hear the answer.

"Attention, everyone!" A cream colored slime approached, gaining our attention. "It is time for the second part of the celebration! The slime dance will now begin!" The crowed cheered.

"The slime dance?" I questioned.

"A few slime that are excellent with dancing perform in the celebrations we have. They are astounding. The most beautiful dancers you'll find in my kingdom." Slush explained

Smoke blasted in the center of the circle, and a few slime girls changed the pitch and sound of the sound. One was playing the Oboe, one the tambourine, one was also hitting a small drum.

The smoke slowly cleared and two slime girls were in the center. It was the two from before. The first one was pink, with ruby colored eye, and the other was light yellow, with sunny yellow colored eyes. I was blushing deeply, not because they're just the same slime that are slyly smiling at me, but they're also wearing belly dancer outfits. Their upper bras were barely containing their breasts, and their arabian leggings were showing their colored skin.

They started to dance in beautiful sync. Their hips swaying to the music and spinning. The crowd cheered and clapped for the performance. Apparently though, they also did some dirty moves when I was watching them.

As they faced me, they threw their heads up, allowing their breasts to swing up and down, and flash their butts in my view.

I was desperately trying my hardest to keep myself from getting hard and controlling my deep blushing. Then they are moving to my direction, with their hips swaying and their breasts bouncing with every step. Gel saw this but couldn't do anything unless she want to ruin the dance.

I gulped loudly, as they approached closer to me. The pink slime moved to the back of me, while the yellow one moved on front of me. My slime jumped off my lap and jumped on Gels, not wanting to interrupt the dance or get in the way.

The yellow slime slyly smiled with half lidded eyes. Out of the bloom, she then sat on lap, causing me to blush further. Adding more, she started to grind against my lap, swaying her hips forward and backward against me. Two pairs of pink hands snaked around my chest and glided around me, getting every angle.

"*Oh god, help me."* My erection was now getting hard, and I was losing myself. The yellow slime felt it and cooed a little, feeling the bulge under her. She wrapped her arms around my head and pushed my face into her large cleavage.

"*Jesus fucking christ!"* If my face wasn't red from before, it was now. My body was trembling. I was trying my hardest to keep myself in total control. The pink slime in the back gave my cheek a peck, until the two moved away from me and walked back to the circle, giving me last wins and blow kisses. They swayed their hips as they returned to the circle.

I breathed deeply, and looked down, fighting off my erection and blush.

Slush laughed. "What did I tell ya, lad? Aren't they amazing?"

I looked back up and swallowed. "I...I guess so."

"Hmhmhm. You are one lady killer. They were all over you."

"You're not helping Sir." I responded.

Gel had that look that you can tell that she was not mad she was mega pissed off about this whole thing.

"Gel, is everything okay?" I asked her.

"Y-yeah. I'm okay." She looked back, but glared deeply at the slime girls who continued their dance.

The slime girls gave their last pose in the dance and it ended. The crowed cheered one last time until they smiled and winked at me, making me blush. It also caused Gel to glare at the girls.

"Enjoyed the performance, lad?" Slush asked.

"Yeah, the dancers were amazing. Though I think it was a bit too much when they started… seducing me." I said with a blush.

Slush laughed. "Don't worry, my boy. They're always like this. You'll get used to it." he patted my back.

I then noticed that Gel was very… angry for some reason.

"Umm… you okay Gel?" I asked.

"I'm fine." She said, with a growl.

"Gel," I placed a hand on her shoulder, and she looked at me. "Why are you so upset? You can tell me."

"I...I…" She sighed a little, calming down. "I'm just a little upset, after what those two were doing."

"You mean the way those two were making moves on me?"

"Yes. I could tell you were getting uncomfortable with it."

"Why didn't you say anything?"

"Because I didn't want to ruin the celebration. I just wanted you to enjoy yourself."

"I can't enjoy myself if you're angry. You're my friend, and I want my friends to smile and have a good time." I cupped her cheek. "Come on,

let me see one of your smiles."

She blushed, but I finally saw the smile I knew.

"There you go." The slime jumped back on my lap, and I chuckled while Gel giggled.

The celebration went on, until the sun set. After that, Gel, Slush and I returned to the castle. Slush allowed me to stay in one of the rooms for the night. I decided to take a shower. Slush showed me the room, but it was actually a large grand bath.

"Wow. this is huge." I said looking around.

"That it is. I'll leave you to get cleaned, and there's a clean stack of clothing for you at your room."

I thanked him and he left. I got out of the suit and stepped into the water. I sighed and leaned against the rim of the tub, allowing myself to get soaked in the water.

I then heard the water bubbling. I looked and saw a lot of bubbles bubbling around the tub.

"*A tube heater?*" However, that wasn't what I thought. The water blasted up and then…

"*HOLY SHIT!*" There were a bunch of slime girls...all freaking naked in front of me. The burning blush returned and I covered my manhood.

"Ready to be washed? They all asked in synch.

"W-w-what!?" They all gushed soap on their breasts and scrubbed until suds formed. They all started rubbing their soapy tits around my body and they used their hands and were rubbing all over my body.

"W-wait a minute! Hang on a sec!" They ignored my pleading and continued to clean me. My face and head was buried in their breasts,

and even some of them were rubbing my dick. I was blushing so hard, I think I may have a permanent red face.

(Some time later)

After the sudden attack back at the royal bath, I dried myself off and sighed.

I headed into my room, hoping to get some silence.

"Hey there handsome." I heard a voice say behind me. I jumped and looked back and saw a gray slime girl with a seductive look in her eyes.

"Uh...hello." I said. "What are you doing in my room?"

"Oh, I was assigned to help you get into your clothes." She answered with a toothy smirk.

I blushed deeply. "Uh! T-that's not necessary! I can change by myself!"

She giggled, and walked towards me. I was backing away, but I accidentally fell onto the bed. She then pounced on me and pinned me.

"Hmhmhm. You look so cute when you blush."

"C-can we talk this out?" I pleaded whimpered.

"Mmmmmm...nope." She then kissed me deeply. I went wide eyed and I felt her tongue invade my mouth. She grinded her body against mine as she moaned.

"*Fuckfuckfuckfuckfuck!"* I was panicking again. I didn't know what to do with this situation. She then pulled up and ripped off her clothing, exposing her body. My erection returned, seeing her hourglass curved body before me, and her large breasts swinging in my eyes.

"Oh Notch, I never felt this horny in all my life." She grabbed my towel and pulled it off, exposing my dick before her.

"Ohhhh. So big." She trailed down to it and she started kissing it and licking it.

"*Shiiiiiiiiit."* I groaned, feeling her tongue wrap around my cock. She then took the whole thing in her mouth and started sucking.

I growled and I was gripping the bedsheet. I never felt such high pleasure in all my life. It felt...so damn good.

The girl pulled back and then sandwiched my hard manhood against her breasts. I gasped as she stroked up and down, sending electrical pulse of pleasure down my spine.

"P...please...stop...I think I'm gonna…" I couldn't finish as she took the tip into her mouth and sucked.

"FUCK!" I yelled and came for the first time in my life. My cum shot into her mouth and she went wide eyed. She then gulped down my cum in bliss.

When my orgasm faded, I panted heavily.

"*Holy...shit."* She crawled on top of me and gently kissed me.

'"You taste so good." She smirked. "Now I want your rod inside of me."

"*What!? No! Not that!"* She lined up the outer lips of her womenhood and was about to sink in.

"*SHIT! NOT MY VIRGINITY! I WAS GOING TO SAVE IT FOR SOMEONE I LOVE ! NOT THIS!"* She gave me a wink and then-

"WHAT ARE YOU DOING!?" I looked and saw my savior, Gel."

"*THANK GOD!"* I cried happily. I was so relieved Gel came in time.

The slime girl had a shocked face. "Gel?"

Gel went from anger to shock. "Goo?"

"Oh my Notch! It's been a while!" She ran to her and hugged her. Gel however pushed her off.

"What's the big idea of forcing yourself on Daniel!?" Gel asked in anger.

Goo smiled. "What? He's a hunk. You know for certain I can't control my hormones, little niece."

"Still though! You can't just force yourself onto him like that!"

"What? You want a piece of him too?" She asked smirking. "Maybe we can do a threesome?"

Gel blushed deeply as did I.

"N-No! I don't want to force Daniel into something he isn't comfortable with!" She yelled out.

"Awww, you're no fun."

"Anyway, you should leave. I'm sure Daniel needs his rest."

"Mmmm...well, if you say so." She looked back at me. "Remember hunk, I'm watching your every move." She walked out, swaying her hips as she did so.

I sighed and plopped onto my bed.

"You alright?" Gel walked over to me and sat next to me.

"Yeah. Thanks for the save."

"Sure." She blushed and looked away. "You might want to get into some clothing though."

I blushed deeply, looked down and saw my manhood still erected. My blush only deepened.

I dashed over to the wardrobe and found a black T-shirt and red shorts. I put them on quickly and walked out of the wardrobe.

"What you saw wasn't my first invasion." I said to Gel. "While I was bathing, over four slime girls rose from the tub, and they were all naked." I blushed deeply remembering back to those disturbing moments.

"I'm sorry. The slime girls in the kingdom have the tendency of not controlling their hormones, either around you, or each other."

"Yeah. I can tell for the way they all acted around me." I rubbed my head and yawned. "Well, I think I'm gonna get some sleep now. I'm exhausted." I laid my head on the pillow, and sighed.

"Um...do you mind if I can…" Gel blushed. "Sleep with you again?"

I blushed again, but I smiled. "Yeah. I would like that."

She smiled and laid next to me. I pulled the covers over us. Gel scooted closer to me and yawned cutely.

I chuckled. "You have a very cute yawn."

Gel blushed, smiled and kissed my cheek. "You're very sweet."

I blushed a little, but smiled back. "I try."

She nuzzled into me. "Good night Daniel." she whispered.

"Sweet dreams Gel." I whispered, stroking her hair and wrapped an arm around her.

As she fell asleep, I looked at the ceiling and thought about my day. Man, what a crazy day. First, I get kissed by Gel, then a feast is held for

my heroism, then slime girls seduce me, then they start seducing me in a bathtub, and I almost lost my virginity. Man, this has been the craziest day of my young life.

As I was thinking, my eyelids grew heavier. I didn't fight it and I closed my eyes, allowing sleep to take hold of me.

Well, that's that everyone! Another chapter of Minecrafts Human Spirit! I want to give a big thanks to Starshine89, Funnymaos, Cosmicsafe74 and austinmiller214 for helping me with this chapter.

Starshine89: It was an honor to help out bro. Thank you all so much for reading! My name is Adam, or Starshine89.

Cosmicsafe74: Thank you for an amazing story Sonic. It was great to help him on this chapter and that you so much for reading this chapter readers! My name is Cosmicsafe74.

Sonic3461: We enjoyed making this chapter, and we'll be working together for this story. Give a shout out to these amazing authors and to their hard work on their page.

Like always, follow, fave and comment! Thank you all so much for reading and stay tuned for the next update in the next chapter of Minecrafts Human Spirit!

All: See you all later everyone! ^^

Starshine89 flies off in a blue and yellow rocket ship that looks like a polygon.

Cosmicsafe74 flies off in an black and crimson A-10.

Sonic3461 gives a peace sign and vanishes in thin air.

5. Chapter 5

Chapter 5: The invasion has begun

It was the next morning and I woke up seeing Gel snuggled beside me. She looked a little cute while she was sleeping, but I needed to wake her up so I nudged her a little bit more and she woke up.

"Good morning sleeping beauty." I said to Gel.

Gel blushed a little after that. "Good morning, Daniel."

We both got up and stretched. It was another morning for me in the slime kingdom. I wonder what will be in store for me and Gel today?

Gel left my room, so I can change. I got back into my SAO clothes, which were washed yesterday, thanks to some of the maids in the castle.

After getting changed, Gel and I walked down the halls and entered the dining room.

We entered and saw Slush, already eating.

"Good morning you two." Slush greeted smiling.

"Morning, father." Gel smiled.

"Morning, Slush." I greeted as well.

The two of us sat down and the maids gave us our meals. The one that gave mine gave me a wink and walked away, leaving me to blush a little. Gel glared a little.

"I hope you slept well, lad." Slush said to me while he bit into his bread.

"I did, Slush. Thank you for asking." I grabbed an apple and started eating it.

Suddenly, my head sunk into two gray globs of smooth slime.

"Morning hunk.~" A voice called out with a low voice.

"Goo! Knock it off!" Gel shouted.

"What? Can't say good morning to my favorite human?" She asked and pulled away.

"By shoving your cleavage in his face?" Gel countered.

"It's not that he minds it," She looked at me with a wink. "Right?"

"Uhhh…" I was blushing again.

"You are so adorable when you blush." By surprise, Goo sat on my lap, with her breasts squishing against my chest.

"Goo!" Gel shouted.

"What?"

"Don't what me! Why are you sitting on his lap!?"

"Because I want to." Goo leaned close to my face. "Not to mention he's comfortable...and warm."

This was a bit too much for me. I gently pushed her off.

"Goo, knock it off. Please." I said gently with a hint of stern in my voice.

"Awww, are you playing hard to get?" She teased.

"No. I'm just more in control of myself is all." I answered.

"Control, huh?" She smirked deviously. She then scooted closer to me. "How about I change that?" Quicker than I could react, Goo snaked her hand through my pants and underwear, stroking my cock.

I gasped sharply, by the sudden touch, the feeling of pleasure swimming in my nerve system. I felt myself getting hard, and was biting my tongue and lower lip, fighting to hold in my moans. My face was burning with a deep blush.

"GOO! What are you doing!?" Gel shouted blushing.

"Mmmmmm.~ So hard.~ So big.~" She cooed and then started kissing my neck.

"Daddy! Do something!" Gel shouted to his father.

"Aw, let your niece have her fun. She's not doing any harm is she?" He questioned.

"But dad! She's touching his...well..private parts!"

Slush laughed. "That means your niece is growing up to be a fine young lady."

"*I always have to do everything myself."* Gel approached Goo and grabbed her hand.

"Goo, enough."

"What's wrong little niece? Jealous?" Goo teased smirking.

"I'm not jealous. I want you to stop-hmmp!?" Apparently, she didn't finish when Goo planted her lips on Gel's.

My face shattered into a depth of shock, my eyes were bulged out, seeing two gorgeous slime girls making out in front of me.

Goo grabbed her little niece and pulled her closer, deepening the kiss. She moaned loudly enough for me to hear and grabbed one of Gel's breasts.

Gel squeaked by the touch and tried to fight it, but when Goo caressed her cleavage, she lost the battle and sank into the kiss, relaxing.

My face was burning with a deep blush and I tried to turn away, but the sight of two girls kissing in front of me, I couldn't, and my erection wasn't helping.

Goo then started moving her hand down to her… womanhood… as her hand made contact with her private parts, she gasped sharply and pushed her away.

"Goo, what the hell?!" she yelled blushing very hard.

"Don't deny it, little niece. You liked it." Goo smirked lustfully. "And I can tell our human friend is enjoying the show."

I was very red and I didn't say a word but my body began heating up but I was able to control myself.

"Ugh. Come on, Daniel." She grabbed my hand and the two of us left the dining hall.

"Playing hard to get. I like it." Goo giggled and left.

Gel and I walked down the halls of the castle, heading for the exit to enter the village.

"I'm so sorry, for what my niece did back there." Gel apologized.

"I-It's okay." I said rubbing my head.

"No, it wasn't. Goo should have never done that. It was uncalled for." Gel countered.

"Really, it's fine. I'm just not used to girls touching me like that." I explained.

"I can tell."

The small cyan slime cube hopped to us and he landed on my shoulder.

"Oh, hey little guy." I rubbed his head and he nuzzled into my touch.

"By the way, have you thought of a name to give to him?" Gel questioned.

"Not yet, but I need one though." I looked at the little cube, thinking of a name to give him.

"What about Slim Slimy?" Gel asked.

"Nah. He isn't slimy like you think."

"Ummm...Blue?"

"Mmmmm...a good name, but doesn't fit though."

"What do you think?"

I thought for a moment, until I looked into it's sapphire blue eyes again. Wait...I got it!

"How about Sapphire?" I asked smiling.

The cube's eyes lit up and it hopped happily.

"Sapphire.. It's perfect." Gel said smiling. "His eyes are as blue as sapphires, just like yours."

After naming my slime cube, now named Sapphire, we entered the village, walking around. As we did, many of the adult slime girls were eyeing me with lust. Some blew kisses at me, while some shook their breasts and butts at me.

"What is going on with the slimes today?" I questioned blushing a little.

"Well, you're a boy, and a boy means that they want you...badly." Gel answered.

"Great." I rubbed my head again.

As we continued on, two bodies pressed against me, on my sides. I blushed when I realized it was the two girls that performed yesterday.

"*Oh no, not these two."* Gel thought.

"Hey there big boy. How did you like our dances from yesterday?" The yellow one asked in a lust filled voice.

"Of course he liked our dances. Didn't you see his cute reaction when we danced against him?" The pink slime asked.

"Um...well...ehehehehe." I chuckled nervously.

"By the way, name's Pinkie." The pink slime greeted.

"I'm Sunny." The yellow slime greeted as well.

"Come and we'll show you around town if you want to.~" Sunny said putting more force of her body on mine.

"Uh...well, I guess that's okay." I said blushing like an idiot. I saw Gel and her face was very green.

"Wait for me Daniel!" said Gel and she was trying to get hold of me but Sunny and Pinkie got me by the arms. So she got me by my shoulders.

"Why are you two being so clingy to me?" I questioned. I knew that was a very stupid question.

"Why, we just want to show you around," Sunny answered.

"And give you...a good time." Pinkie snaked her hand down to my pants and grabbed my dick.

"Hey! Don't do that to him!" Gel exclaimed grabbing her hand.

"Not to mention, we're in public." I added.

"We heard a rumor about you and that you're very huge.~" Pinkie whispered. She tried to get to my pants again, but was stopped by Gel again.

"Please, don't do this. We're in public. People are gonna see us." I said.

"Oh, don't worry about that. We slimes in the kingdom have sex in public all the time." Sunny explained smirking.

"WHAT!?" I shouted blushing very hard now. Seriously, how many times am I gonna be blushing for crying out loud.

"Why yes... and you should know how much us slime girls want a man... and you're a very handsome one at that." Pinkie explained.

We then heard a shout coming from a few feet away, and what I saw, my face went red. Five slime girls only wearing what look like bankie were running and their tits are bouncing a lot. One pants and kneels. The other four approach her with lust filled smirks. They push her to the ground and they all took their clothes off. One was sucking her breasts, one was grinding her pussy in her face, and the other was grinding her slit against hers, while eating out the other.

"*Holy mother of god."* I wanted to look away, but the sight was...so fucking sexy as hell. My pants feel weird and I thought *"Oh no! Stay down!"*

The slimes around the area were rubbing their pussies at the show before them, while some were having fun of their own. *"I hate and love my life."* I thought.

"See what I mean?" Sunny questioned smirking.

"Eh...fa….ble…" No words were coming out of my mouth. I was in a nightmare, and in paradise at the same time. Gel was very mad and want to do something so I can only look at her.

"How about we join them?~" Pinkie asked licking her lips.

"AH! N-n-nononono! That's not necessary!" I stuttered out.

"Come on, I can tell you're have fun, your greatsword is saying something else." Pinkie giggled, looking at my erection.

"No! Daniel is not comfortable with this!" Gel said glaring at the two.

(HEAVY LEMON WARNING)

Sunny had a different approach. She pulled her close and groped her breasts, making the princess squeal in surprise while blushing. Sunny started to be a little more force in her groping, squeezing her tits.

"P...please...I…" Gel tried to find her words, but pleasure took over here again. Then a new red slime girl come behind her and started to grab her butt hard. Gel squeal at the sudden force of the touch.

"Mmmmm...such lovely tits you have, your highness.~" Sunny cooed.

Meanwhile Pinkie so this and was now looking at me said, "Let's play along to.~" she then kiss me and put her tongue in my mouth and the weird part is she taste like bubble gum. She glided her hand down and stroked my hard erection and she could barely get her hand around half of it.

I literally had no control over my body now. My body and mind were fighting. My mind was telling me to run, while my body was telling me to just fuck her already.

Sunny and the red slime took the fun to a new level. They started to put their goo powers into her and her body was now filled with the desire of

lust and sex.

"F...fuck me….fuck me until I cum so hard, and can't feel my legs~" Gel begged with lust in her voice.

"As her highness commands.~" Sunny and the red slime force as much of their arms in her and ripped her clothing off, exposing her naked body for the world to see. Her breast bounced a lot as her clothing was torn from her body.

The red slime groped her now T-cup breasts and kissed and licked her neck, making Gel moan in pleasure. Sunny kissed her deeply and grinded her body against her as their tongues danced. Then the red slime started to grab Gels massive butt and started to grab as much as her red hands could.

"So big.~" The red slime cooed unit she tore her clothes off as well. Sunny then put her hands on Gel massive hips and said, "My my princess how could you be so naughty?~" said Sunny. While pressing her tits against Gels. The red slime snaked her hands to her soaked pussy and swirled her hips around, allowing Gels hips to follow with her movement. Sunny grabbed the two and held them, while following the movement of their hips as well while she continued to kiss her.

Meanwhile I saw Gel and was thinking *"Jesus she much bigger then out of her clothes. That must be because of her slime powers."*

"The more powerful we are, the bigger we become in our female parts and Gel is the biggest out of all of us and if she get more slime in her she will become a lot bigger.~" Pinkie explained.

My face turned red again, and looked at Gel's massive chest. I can't believe how horny she can be when she has that much slime in her.

The red slime absorbed some of the slime and her chest grew to a K-Cup size. She then shot slime out of her nipples into Sunny mouth. She

swallowed the slime and her tits grew to a Q-Cup and her ass and hips grew bigger.

"Hey Sunny, can I get some?" Pinkie said to sunny. Sunny shot some of her slime in Pinkie mouth and some got on my face and mouth and it tasted like lemon candy. Pinkie grew up into a N-cup and her ass grew bigger as well.

"Jesus christ." I muttered. Around us, many slime girls circled us and I somehow felt bigger.

"And one more thing a slime girl goo can make your Greatsword bigger and you produce more sperm and your balls get bigger." Pinkie grabbed my pants and tore them off, exposing my dick. I was shocked. My cock was once 7 inches, but now it was 10 inches and thicker, I was surprised I didn't pass out because of how big I was. My ball sack was bigger as well, they were the size of baseballs.

Many of the slime girls saw my new rod and sack and they drooled like mad dogs and one said, "I thought the slime only effects us."

"Forget that, look how big he is!"

"I want that thick dick in my wet pussy!"

"I didn't know how he could walk with something that big."

"Ok big boy let see how you are at fucking.~" Pinkie said with full blown lust in her voice. She then went put her hand around my dick but could only get a little under half of it in her hands. She started to go up and down at a slow rate, she then say some of my pre cum leaking out and i was surprised it look like their was a few cup worth of pre coming out.

Sunny and the red slime girl placed Gel down on the ground and started to put their mouths on Gels nipple and suck very hard, Gel screamed in lust while Sunny and the red slime grew up into S-cups and Gel when down to a D-cup and her hips and ass got much smaller.

Meanwhile Pinkie saw my pre-cum and gave my dick a long and slow lick with her tongue, "This is the best thing I ever tasted." Said pinkie then what I was now shock me she grew to a S-cup and her hips and ass got much bigger.

"Oh my Notch I got so huge, girls you gotta taste his cum!" Pinkie said with lust.

Sunny pulled up and walked over to my dick, still leaking a little with my pre cum. She licked up some of it and she swallowed it. Her breasts then grew to a T-Cup and her ass and hips grew as well.

"Oh my Notch. I'm as big as Gel now." Sunny said in shock.

"If his sperm makes our bodies this big when we taste it," She licked her lips. "How big will we get if he cums inside of us?"

"*Oh no."* Before I could run, the two pinned me to the ground.

"Oh, Gel, come over here and let's give our Human a good Show.~" Sunny called out smirking.

Gel got up and walked over to us. She eyed my thick dick and drooled.

"Suck." Sunny commanded with lust.

Gel wasted no time and wrapped her whole mouth around my throbbing member. She bobbed her head up and down deep and fast, gagging and moaning loudly and choking because she new that this and was licking my balls too, sending vibrations through my rod and balls..

I grunted loudly. Her mouth felt so warm, and wet. Pre pumped out and she quickly swallowed it. When she did, her breasts returned to a T-Cup along with her hips and ass return back to their normal sizes.

During the fuck fest, many of the slime girls around us were massively turned on. They all ripped their clothes off and were fucking whoever

they got their hands on. It was a massive fuck fest all over the area. Then Sunny put her pussy on my face and I started to eat her out. Not that I had any other choice now.

"Ohhh, fuck.~ Yes, eat me out you piece of hunk.~ Suck and lick my dirty pussy.~" Sunny moaned, grinding against my mouth.

Meanwhile, Gel was sucking on my dick like her life depended on it and was green from having no air in her lungs but she didn't care she just wanted more, her tongue swirling around and getting every angle. The tip of my cock hit the back of her throat deeply with every suck.

"*Fucking...if she keeps this up...I won't be able to...OH SHIT!"* I grunted and came hard in her mouth. It was ten gallons of cum that when right into her stomach. Then my mouth got it with Sunny cum and it when all in my mouth and I was thinking, *"Oh no."* Then I felt my cock and balls grow to 24 inches and now was much thicker than before and my balls were now very huge basketballs

"*WHAT THE FUCK IS WRONG WITH THIS GOO!?"*

Gel had it bad when end of my cock poked against her face. Her body shook, and her body grew larger than ever. She still had her hourglass figure, but now her tits were ZZZ-Cup and her ass cheek are now 2 feet away from her hips and they are now 8 feet wide.

The slime girls were shocked how sexy Gel looked and massive my manhood was. They all screamed in pleasure, as they fucked one another harder, drinking each others slime and growing bigger.

Many of the slime girls gathered around me and started licking and sucking my cock and balls, I grunted and let off small moans. All I can feel in my body right now was pleasure. Four slime girls gathered and massaged my dick with their massive M-cups tits. They licked the tip and kissed one another as they did so. It was all enough for me to cum again, When I did, it was literally like a firehose, landing on the breasts and faces of the slime girls. My dick and balls just continued to grow.

"Gimme that dick, handsome!" Sunny shouted and she pushed the slime girls away and lined up her pussy, but Gel pushed her off and lined herself up.

Without hesitation, she plunged down and stole my virginity and her hymen broke and a bit of green blood come out when it broke. She screamed in pleasure, not caring about the enormous pain.

"It's so thick, and long! It's filling me up to my limit!" She moaned. My member was hitting her G-spot numerous times and I could see a massive bulge in her stomach. She moved her hips up and down, riding my monster of a dick.

"AH! FUCK! POUND MY PUSSY! FUCK ME SO HARD, UNTIL I BREAK!" She screamed in pleasure, slamming her hips down with every thrust she was moving very quickly, having her massive tits bounce with every thrust. she had too much weight on her so i put her under me started to fuck her very hard while my balls bounce onto her inner thighs. Her pussy was too tight and it hurt so badly but it felt so good and I was stretching her pussy. With my body surrendering to the pleasure, I latched onto her massive breasts, sucking one and squeezing the other, making her scream in pleasure. Her milk when into my mouth and before I got a few tablespoons in I let go with my mouth now i felt myself getting bigger now 26 inches and my balls grew.

"FUCK! FUCK! FUCK! FUCK ME! FUCK MEEEEEEEEEE!" Gel screamed.

Sunny and Pinkie were now fondling my balls and sucking as much as they could get into their mouths. Slime girls were licking, sucking and grinding their pussies as they did so, and fondling with their breasts.

"This is far, the best fucking I've ever done in my life, Sunny!~" Pinkie moaned as she sucked on my right ball sac and the red slime girl was grinding her pussy against hers.

"It was like, Notch brought this human to us as a blessing!~" Sunny moaned as a slime girl ate her slit out.

Then I felt me going close and tried to warn Gel, but she slammed her lips against mine and her tongue raided my mouth. I got bigger when our tongues met now i was 30 inches and my nuts look like they were the size of two very enormous watermelons.

Then, it happened, after another 10 powerful thrusts, we came. Gel broke the kiss and screamed at the top of her lungs. dozens of dozens of gallons of cum going into her, growing her and making her eyes roll back. I slowly pulled out and as I did my cum gushed everywhere. Gel stroked my cock and she sucked on it while she did then she went balls deep on my dick, swallowing as much of my sperm as possible. She quickly got up and dove her slit back, making my manhood slide back into her. I groaned, feeling her warm walls clamp down on my cock as she continued to take all of my sperm in. After three more gushes, my climax ended. The two of us panted heavily, and looked at each other in the eyes.

The rest of the slime girls around us screamed as well, cumming all over one another. We still looked at each other in the eyes, blocking out the sound of the screams. Gel then leaned close to me and whispered, "I love you." She kissed me deeply, until we passed out.

(LEMON END)

()

When I woke up i was in a bed and then a saw to my left was Gel. Her body was back to normal,and was wearing her dress. I too was wearing my bed clothing. How did we get here? I looked around and saw we were back in my room in the castle.

I then heard Gel moaning and slowly opening her eyes. She looked to me and softly asked, "Daniel?"

"Hey. You feeling okay?" I asked.

"I can't feel my legs and my stomach is so full and my mouth and throat hurt a lot. What happened?" She asked.

I was shocked. She didn't remember what happened? Jesus, I guess that slime stuff had destroyed the memories of our fuck fest.

"You were um..how do I say this..." I started.

Then, the doors opened and Slush entered.

"Ah, you two are finally awake." He said smiling.

"Daddy? What happened?" Gel asked.

"You and Daniel have been the center of attention back at the village. You certainly put on one heck of a show." He said.

Gel face when green and said, "I thought that was a dream." Her face then went from shock to horror. "But...if that wasn't a dream, then…" She looked at me and she was shaking.

"I'll leave you two alone." Slush left the room and closed the door behind him.

"I..we….oh my notch." Gel muttered in horror.

"Hey, what happened wasn't your fault." I said softly.

"It was my fault! I raped you, Daniel, not to mention I stole your virginity!" She shouted.

"Look, it wasn't your-"

"STOP SAYING IT WASN'T MY FAULT! HOW CAN YOU BE SO FORGIVING, AFTER WHAT I DID TO YOU!?" She screamed. Tears were falling from her eyes now, and she looked so broken and depressed.

I felt so bad for her. She was lost, after what happened, she looks like I will never forgive her. I pulled her close and hugged her tightly. She froze, and then tried to pull away, but I held a tight grip on her.

"Let go of me! Let go!" She shouted. I ignored her yelling and still kept my embrace. She tried punching me off, but had no effect. Soon, her struggles and punches slowed until she broke down, and sobbed into my chest, hugging me back.

"Shh...it's alright, Gel. It's okay...shh…" I continued to shush her and rock back and forth gently, easing her pain and sadness. I learned a few tricks to calm a friend or loved one down from my mom. She always knew how to make me feel better when I'm sad.

When the door open and a slime girl that was orange and had what look like a doctor outfit on she walked to us and said "Princess, I have some bad news. It looks like you're not going to walk straight for a month because of what happen."

She looked at me, "Mr. Daniel, I would advise you to be more careful. You almost made her not walk ever again." She looked back at Gel, "Princess, you also cannot eat hard food for a few weeks because your jaw is very weak from the expansion of what you put in it."

Gel didn't look at her, but she slowly nodded.

"I'll leave you two alone to get some rest. If you need anything, let one of the maids know." She bowed and left us alone again.

The two of us sat in the silent room, embracing each other, while I continued to shush and rock Gel slightly. After around another 10 minutes she looked back up at me.

"Why?" She choked. "Why are you still so nice and kind to me? All I did was cause trouble for you?"

"Because I care about you, Gel." I answered softly.

"But...why?"

I sighed. "I guess I might tell you now, rather than later." I pulled out my mothers necklace and opened it, revealing a pic of me as a baby and my mother. She has blue sapphire eyes like mine, and blonde hair. "This is my mother. She was one of the two people that truly cared for me when I was little."

"She's...beautiful." Gel whispered.

"Yeah. My mother gets that a lot." I frowned. "But back when I was five, I lost her. She...she died from a disease called cancer. It took her away from me."

Gel gasped in shock and sadness. However, it wasn't over.

"She...she meant everything to me. But I lost her when I was so young." I grinded my teeth in anger and sadness, while a few tears fell. "I wanted to do everything in my power to keep her alive, but she died in front of my eyes. Her last breath taken, her soul ebbed away from me."

"Daniel…" Gel muttered in sadness with tears falling.

"When I lost her, I wanted to be strong. I wanted to try to protect those I can care for and love." I breathed deeply and wiped some tears away. "When I met you, you and I became friends, and I now had someone I can protect and care for."

Gels lips quivered, as more tears were falling from her eyes. I gently stroked her cheek. "No matter what happens between us, I will always be there for you. No matter what."

Gel then pressed her lips against mine, in a passionate kiss. I didn't fight this one, and gladly kissed her back. Our tears fell like waterfalls, and our tongues meeting again and again. I pulled her closer to me, and she clinged to me like her life depended on it. She pulled away, saliva connected to us.

"What did I do, to deserve someone so kind and caring like you?" She whimpered, trying to wipe the tears from her swollen red eyes.

I calmly smiled and hugged her gently, stroking her slime hair. "Because you're someone I know and love. I will never leave you….ever."

Then, what she said next, was something that changed me forever.

"I love you, Daniel."

My heart melted and I smiled again, with tears falling. "I love you too, Gel."

We looked into one another's eye, and we softly kissed one another. We looked out the window and saw the sun fading in the horizon.

"Let's get some sleep." I whispered.

Gel nodded and we tucked into the sheets. Gel cuddled close to me, wrapping her arms around me, and resting her head against my chest.

I wrapped my own arm around her and held her close.

"Goodnight, Gel." I whispered kissing her head.

"Goodnight, Daniel...my love." She whispered, nuzzling into my warmth. The sound of silence filled the room and we fell asleep.

(Next Morning)

The sun slowly rose over the slime kingdom again. It was a new day, but I was still very sore. After that rough fucking, my dick and balls ache. I better lay off the sex for a bit.

I slowly opened my eyes, and looked to my left, seeing Gel, my new girlfriend, sleeping peacefully by my side. I smiled, but then frowned. After what I did to her, I can never forgive myself. I almost destroyed her. If my manhood had grown any bigger, she would have never walked ever

again. I will control myself from now on. I won't let that problem happen again.

"Gel," I gently shook her shoulders. "Gel, wake up."

The green slime girl moaned but she fluttered her eyes open. When her beautiful emerald eyes locked onto mine, she softly smiled.

"Morning." She whispered.

"Hey, how are you feeling?" I questioned softly.

"Sore. Very sore." She answered.

I frowned. "I'm sorry for almost destroying your legs. I promise, I won't let that mistake happen again."

Gel leaned in and gave me a small kiss on the lips, which I returned. "I know you won't."

I smiled and stroked her smooth goo hair.

"Daniel,"

"Hmm?"

Gel blushed. "I need to take a bath. Can you help me out of my clothes and take me to the royal bath?"

I blushed now. "Well...I…."

"It's not like we haven't seen each other naked before. I also trust you." Gel smiled stroking my cheek.

I smiled a little, and nodded to her request. I slowly helped her up and undid her dress. Her beautiful breasts bounced out, and I helped her with her panties. She was one of the most beautiful slime girls I ever laid eyes on.

I carried her bridal style to the royal bath, while she enjoyed the warmth and careness while I held her. When we got to the royal bath, I gently laid her into the tub, and she sighed in bliss.

"Much better." She whispered.

"I'll be waiting outside, if you need me." I turned to leave.

"Wait." She grabbed my hand, stopping me.

"What is it?"

"Can you...stay with me, while I bathe?"

I blushed again. "Are...you sure?"

She smiled and nodded.

I smiled a little and got out of my clothes. When I stopped at my underwear, I was blushing again. I looked at Gel, and she nodded. I took a deep breath and slowly took them off. Gel blushed that I'm naked before her. I checked my dick. I sighed in relief, seeing it was back at its original size, along with my ballsack. I guess the effects wear off in a couple of hours.

I stepped in and sighed, relaxing in the warm water. Gel scooted closer to me and rested her head against my chest, sighing in bliss. I smiled as well, enjoying her company.

After around a couple of minutes in the royal bath, we got dressed and I carried Gel to the Dining Room. The maids approached and gave us our breakfast. They gave Gel some soup and juice. When they heard about her condition, they made sure she doesn't eat anything solid for a while.

We ate, until a doctor came up to us, with a wheelchair. Due to Gel not being able to walk, they were giving her a wheelchair to move around in. After that, a Maid told us that Slush wanted to see us after we eat.

Soon after, we left the dining hall and walked off to the Throne room, where Slush was waiting for us. When we went in, we saw he had an anxious look.

"Gel, Daniel, thank Notch you two came."

"What's going on, father?" Gel asked.

"I got word from a soldier that an army of zombies is on their way towards the slime kingdom."

"WHAT!?" We both said at the same time.

"And the leader is none other than Prince Rot." He said with a growl. Gel and I also growled when we heard his name. I should have known that dickhead would make a comeback.

"If I were to make a wild guess, I'd guess that that spoiled prince is after me as well." Gel said with disgust.

"Don't worry Gel. We'll protect you. We're going to make sure that dumbass doesn't lay either one of his rotten fingers on you." I said, putting a hand on her shoulder.

"The army approaching is strong, but I'll make sure my soldiers stand ready to defend my kingdom. This will be the first war against kingdoms a thousand years."

"Neither kingdom went to war with one another?" I asked shocked.

"No. We usually leave our kingdoms alone, but with what happened with Rot and you, he will do everything in his power to get what he wants. I won't let that happen though." Slush explained.

"Neither will I. We have to get word to a defence unit and an attack unit and make sure they're ready for the invasion." I said.

"Good thinking. I'll let everyone know." Slush said. We then made our way to the balcony.

"Attention to all citizens of the slime kingdom!" he announced, to which everyone paid attention to.

"A horde of undead is on their way to the slime kingdom!" Everyone gasped. "And the leader is none other than the horrendous Prince Rot of the zombie kingdom." he said, with disgust.

"Rot will be after Gel as well, so we must make sure we stand strong and ready before the invasion on the slime kingdom begins! We need to make sure we have enough defence for the kingdom. I've seen weapons on the walls of the kingdom, so all defence units must make their way there and snipe out the zombies! We need to make sure attacks are good as well. Every zombie that steps beyond the wall, show no mercy! Above all, we must make sure that everyone in the slime kingdom stays safe, stands strong, AND MAKES SURE THAT PRINCE ROT AND THOSE ZOMBIES GET WHAT THEY DESERVE!" I said, ending my small speech, to which everyone cheered to.

"That was an amazing speech, Daniel." Gel said, kissing my cheek.

"Thanks Gel." I said with a small blush.

After that, we headed inside and made a plan.

"From what my soldier explained, there should be around 40 thousand zombie soldiers." Slush explained. "If that's not the problem, they're all wearing armor."

"40 thousand!?" Gel and I asked in shock.

"*Damn, he isn't fucking around."* I thought. "Slush, how many soldiers do we have?"

"At best, we have one thousand." He answered.

"However, we slime can split, so we may have around seven thousand at best." Gel explained.

"So, we're up against a 40 thousand army, with only seven thousand soldiers." I muttered.

"My soldiers are preparing for the battle right now." Slush said.

"Slush, let me be part of the leading team." I announced.

Gel looked at me in shock, while Slush looked at me in surprise.

"Are you sure?" He questioned.

"It's part my fault your kingdom is now at war. Besides, Rot and I have some unfinished business." I explained.

Slush nodded. "Very well. Come with me."

The two of us followed Slush, until we entered a room, where a bunch of slime girls were putting on armor and sheathing their swords. When they saw their king and princess enter, they all bowed.

"Listen up, everyone! The undead army is strong, but with our fighting spirit, I know we can achieve victory!" Slush announced.

The soldiers cheered.

"Now, The person that will be leading the army will be Daniel." He placed a hand on my shoulder.

Many of the slimes were blushing when they were looking at me, and I heard them whispering to each other.

"Oh my Notch, he's even hotter up close."

"Did you hear about yesterday?"

"I heard his dick grew so massive."

"I hope he allows me to ride him later on after the battle. I want a piece of him."

"Save some for me."

My face went red and I coughed.

All the soldiers went red, but I stepped forward and started explaining my plan.

After thirty minutes of explaining, we were done with our plan. Defense would shoot zombies with the slime cannons from the walls, and any zombie that got in the kingdom, would be ambushed and killed. Soldiers would be at every corner, and would be ready to attack & kill. Every zombie the snipers would see would be shot. And we would do this again and again until all 40,000 zombies were dead. And I would take care of Mr. Spoiled Bitchy Sad Excuse of a Prince.

"Sound like a plan, girls?" I said to the soldiers, to which they nodded. "Good."

"Prepare yourselves everyone!" Slush announced.

As the soldiers left, I turned to Gel.

"Gel, it would be best you stay with your father for this battle. You're still weak from what happened yesterday." She nodded.

And with that, we got ready.

(Later that evening)

We were standing at the towers, with all of the slime soldiers ready with bows. I had my sword in my grasp and waited.

"There they are!" A purple slime shouted.

The zombie army slowly approached, and what Slush said was right. There was a horde of zombies, each with armor and weapons, with many with none. In the front was the rottne prince himself, in a throne.

He stood up and took out some kind of microphone.

"This is Prince Rot of the Zombie Kingdom!" He bellowed, enough for all of us to hear. "As you all can see, I have an unstoppable army! If you all wish for your lives to be spared, hand over Princess Gel, a few slime girls, and I'll be on my way!"

Many of the slimes growled in disgust by what he said, but I was fuming. All this dick wants to do is use them as his sex slave. To hell that will happen.

"Like we'll do what *you* say, you rotten bastard!" I roared.

Rot looked up and his eyes widened when he saw me. He then growled. "You! How dare you set foot in that place! You're ruining my time of glory!"

"I give zero fucks you dip Shit!" I shouted. "You have a lot of nerve what you did to Gel back at the mines, and the fact you're demanding from this kingdom!"

"I am a prince! I get whatever I want!" He roared.

"Like that's true at all you lonely sadistic son of a bitch! FYI, how the hell are you a prince if your reek ass all the time!?" The slimes laughed at that, and fuming the rotten prince.

"Also, how do you plan to please a princess if your small ass dick will always fall off all the time!?" The slimes howled with laughter, along with the others who overheard what I said.

"Go piss on an electric fence, you fucking son of a bitch!" He roared at me.

If Rot wasn't mad as he was from before, he was now. His face turned completely crimson red.

"Also, you'd better run home to grandmomma before I cut your little dick off… Moldy Maggot."

From that, all the girls in the slime kingdom who could hear me started laughing furiously, while Rot and a few zombies' faces turned dark crimson.

"WHAT DID YOU JUST CALL ME!?"

"I just called you by your name. Rot Dickface Moldy Maggot. Isn't that your name? Because I'm pretty sure that was what your ID card said." I taunted further.

"THE IRONY! IT'S TOO RICH!" A purple slime soldier gutted out.

"N-NO MORE! MY SIDES ARE GONNA SPLIT OPEN!" A blue slime soldier laughed, while rolling around on the ground.

"**THAT DOES IT!"** Rot roared. **"ZOMBIES! ATTAAAAAAAAAAAACK!"**

[Music: New World Sound & Timmy Trumpet - The Buzz. Play from 1:07]

The zombie army roared and charge at the gates.

"Archers! Ready!" I shouted.

The arch team pulled out their bows and arrows.

"Aim…"

They pulled their bows back, and aimed.

"FIRRRRRRRRRE!" I shouted pointing at the army with my sword.

The archers released and fired their arrows. They made contact with many of the zombies. They all were still advanced though.

"CANNONS! FIRE!" I commanded.

The cannons aimed and blasted many of the zombies in the horde. Many were blown to smithereens and many fell off the edge of the path.

"MOVE FORWARD!" Rot roared. The zombie army marched forward, with their swords ready.

"NEVER SURRENDER! KEEP FIRING!" I shouted.

The slimes kept up the pressure and fired their arrows and cannons again and again. The undead army was reducing, and now it was around at least 35,000 I believe. Soon, many of the undead soldiers were at the gates.

"ASSAULT TEAM! ATTACK!" I shouted.

Many slime soldiers popped out of nowhere and started slicing many of the undead soldiers. Many of the zombies tried to bite them, but only meet blades in their mouths.

"Shoot!" I growled. I knew this won't last long, and I know they will enter the kingdom soon.

"Daniel, what do we do!?" a purple slime soldier asked.

"Have the assault team keep fighting, and the archers and cannons firing!" I commanded. "If they're close to busting the gate open, have them fall back, and have them ready for the others!"

"Yes sir!" I jumped down and joined up with the others, who were waiting to strike.

The cannons fired their last cannon balls.

"We're out of cannonballs!" A cream colored slime shouted.

"Fall back to the town, under Daniel's orders!" The purple slime shouted. They all nodded and joined up with us.

The archers continued to fire, until they saw a green cannonball coming their way.

"HIT THE DECK!" They all ducked and the ball missed, but destroyed most of the wall.

"They have cannons!" A black slime shouted.

"Fall back! Fall back!"

They all ran for the town, and it was time to operate plan B.

"HAHAHAHA! What fools!" Rot laughed. "Blast the gates open!"

The zombies aimed at the gates and blasted them open, and they all entered, but as they did, they all stopped.

The slimes and myself were standing there, glares on our faces, and our weapons ready.

"Last chance, Moldy Maggot. Leave now and we won't have to get aggressive." I warned.

"GRRR! OVER MY DEAD BODY!" Rot shouted.

"That can be arranged." I pulled out my sword and pointed at Rot and his army, and screamed, "CHARRRRRRRRRRRRRRRRGE!"

The slimes all let off their battle cries and charged with myself leading the raid.

"GET THEEEEEEEEEEEEM!" Rot screamed and his army charged.

The two armies clashed and limbs and slime was scattered. It was chaos in the Slime Kingdom.

I sliced another zombie while one tried to bite me, but a blade sliced him off, revealing it was Sunny who saved me.

"Thanks." I thanked.

"Anytime handsome. After this, how about we have a little fun for your reward?" She offered with a sultry look, while tracing a finger across my chest, causing me to blush slightly.

I pushed her hand off. "After what you did yesterday with Gel, I'll pass." I grunted. I ran off and sliced another zombie. I then saw one zombie run past the chaos and head for the castle, with a few zombies. It was Rot.

"SHIT!" I ran after them.

Rot and his army he took with him got past the guards, and entered the castle. They passed through the halls and entered the throne room, seeing Slush and Gel.

"Hello Gel." Rot greeted smirking.

"You have a lot of nerve, stepping into my kingdom and starting a war, and for what you did to my daughter." Slush growled, unsheathing his sword.

"Don't get involved with my plan, Slush. Once I have your daughter, I will finally gain a wife and my dream will be complete."

"OVER MY DEAD BODY!" Slush roared and charged.

Rot smirked and threw a dart at him, shocking Slush, and making him scream in pain.

"FATHER!" Gel screamed.

Slush fell to the ground, and grunted, while electricity pulsed through him.

"What...did you do to me?" He demanded.

"I simply paralyzed you. I know you slimes have a weakness to electricity, so I picked up a few things before my invasion began." Rot explained smirking. He turned to Gel, who was trying to back up, but she was grabbed by the zombies and pinned her to the ground.

"NO! LET ME GO!" She screamed and tears fell from her eyes.

Rot smirked and walked up to her. "With that damn mob out of the picture and your daddy stunned, you're mine." He chuckled licking his lips.

"LEAVE MY DAUGHTER ALONE!" Slush screamed trying to get up.

"Not happening." He grabbed her dress and exposed her naked body again.

"You're all mine, bitch." He smirked and started unbuckling his pants.

"*No….no…"* Gel prayed for her savior to come, Daniel.

Suddenly, an arrow zipped past him, but grazed his cheek, drawing blood. He looked back and saw his mob enemy with a bow.

"Daniel!" Gel yelled in relief and happiness.

"Sorry I'm late." I said. "I got sidetracked."

"You bastard!" Rot growled.

"I gave you a chance, Rot. Now, you're gonna pay for your ugly sins and I'll do that by sending you to the nether." I growled back.

He pulled out his golden sword and took his stance. "I will end you here and now, and feed off your corpse."

"Go ahead and try, Rot Dickface Moldy Maggot." I taunted and took my stance.

[Stop Music]

[Music: Shtriga - Let's Bounce. Play from 0:26]

Rot roared and charged at me with his sword, but I was quick and I blocked it. He quickly pulled back and swung again, and now it was a sword battle.

KLING KLANG KLINK

Sword sounds were the only things that were heard in the throne room. I pulled back and quickly threw a slash, slicing his cheek, causing blood to ooze from his cheek.

"AH! DAMN YOU!" He shouted. He lunged at me again, but I quickly weaved out of the way and slashed his arm again. He screamed in pain and stumbled back.

I narrowed my eyes and walked forward.

"You….what are you?" He growled in pain.

I stopped a few feet from him and pointed my sword at him. "My name is Daniel Blaze. I am the last of a dying Race, known as Humans!" I announced.

Rot gasped in shock, knowing I was a human now. A smirk slowly formed and he chuckled.

"Well, that would explain why your blood taste wonderful. This will truly be an accomplished feat. When I kill you, I will become legendary, and I will gain all the women I want."

"You'll gain nothing maggot." I snarled.

That set him off quickly and growled. "SHUT UP!" He lunged at me and swung his sword, but I quickly blocked it and swung back. The blade made contact with his face and he drew more blood. He stumbled back and his face had a large deep cut.

I pointed my blade at him. "Give it up Rot. It's over."

Rot growled, telling me he was far from done. He pulled out two glass bottles, filled with different liquids. I immediately knew what they were. It was a damage and an invisibility potion. He drank the two liquids and his wounds healed and quickly vanished.

"Hahahaha! How do you plan on fighting me now, that you can't see me!?" He taunted.

I'll give him credit, he did come prepared, but he's once again underestimating me. I closed my eyes and focused on my surroundings. I listened, waited and smelled my surroundings.

I felt the wind shift to my right and smelled Rot. I quickly raised my sword and I successfully blocked his attack.

"What!?" Rot gasped. I moved his blade away and slashed him, making him scream in pain.

"How is this possible!? How did you know I was there!?" He demanded.

"You're once again underestimating me asshole. It takes more than a good arm and strength to be a capable warrior. I sensed the change in the air when you moved, not to mention I can smell your rotting flesh. It's a dead give away to your position." I explained.

"Grrr! Damn you human!" Rot roared and charged again. I sighed as I pulled up my blade and blocked his attack, and then swung it, and heard

his painful screams. I heard clacking on the floor and saw his sword. From that, i knew I cut his hand or arm off.

"WHY YOU!" Rot roared.

I blasted forward and stabbed him in the chest. His invisibility wore off, and he was covered in cuts and blood oozing.

"When you return to your kingdom, tell your father that if you or anyone in his kingdom brings harm or death to any kingdom again, I will personally enter his kingdom and kill everyone on the spot." I growled.

Rot grunted. "This...isn't over….human." He then exploded in dust and experience points dropped. It was over and we have won.

[Stop Music]

Outside, each of the zombies felt their leader fall and they all exploded into dust, returning to the kingdom as well, knowing they can't fight back without their leader.

The Paralysis wore off and Slush finally stood again. He looked at me and smiled gratefully. "Daniel Blaze, you are one amazing human. On the behalf of the slime kingdom, I thank you from the bottom of my heart."

I smiled and waved my hand. "No problem, Slush. Happy to help." I then looked at Gel, who slowly got up. I ran to her and gently picked her up.

"Are you okay?" I asked in concern.

She looked at me and smiled while a blush formed. "I am now that I'm here with you."

I smiled and shook my head. Gel grabbed me and smashed her lips against mine. I was startled, but then relaxed into the kiss and our tongues danced.

Slush only chuckled and shook his head. Sapphire jumped on my shoulder and nuzzled me. I smiled and stroked his head, making him jiggle a little.

(Later)

After the zombies left, all of the slimes cheered for me for my bravery and they all gathered around me, asking for me to either sign autographs for the little girls, or wanted to get fucked by me. I signed a few autographs, but declined the invitation to fuck them. I'm not that interested for a while.

A little after, I told them something that shocked them.

"You're leaving?" Slush asked surprised.

"Yeah. I really wish to stay longer, but I have to return home. Besides, I want to look for more humans." I explained.

Slush smiled. "I understand. Again, thank you so much for protecting my kingdom. If you ever want a place to stay for a while, our kingdom will always welcome you."

"Thank you Slush." I said. Sapphire decided to come with me, and Slush allowed me to take him, as long as I looked after him, which of course I will do.

Gel walked up to her father. "Father?"

"Yes?"

"I wish to go with Daniel on his journey in Minecraftiea. He protected me through thick and thin, and I wish to be by his side, from now until the end."

"Gel…" I was surprised but also warmed by her words, and knowing she cares about me so much.

Slush laughed. "Of course my dear. You're free to travel with him." He looked at me. "Daniel, please look after my daughter."

I smiled and nodded. Gel walked over to me and wrapped her arms around me, while I wrapped an arm around her waist. "Your daughter in safe capable hands, Slush."

Slush nodded and a Slime gathered around us.

"Farewell you two. Stay safe."

"Farewell, Slush." I waved goodbye.

"Goodbye, father." Gel waved as well. The slime engulfed up and we sank to the bottom of the floor and blasted off back to my home.

"That boy will do wonders for us all." Slush said smiling and went back to his throne to continue his duties.

Hey everyone! Sorry for the wait on the update! I hope we haven't kept you all waiting. I want to thank Starshine89, Funnymaos, Cosmicsafe74 and austinmiller214 for helping me once again with the chapter. They deserve half of the credit for the making if the chapter.

As always, comment, fave and follow. Thank you all for reading and for the support, and I'll see you all next time in the next update of MHS! ^^

6. Chapter 6

Chapter 6: Bones, Webs, and Shy Girls

After around a few moments in the slime, it finally died down, much to my relief. I opened my eyes and see we were in the open fields. I stretched and sighed deeply.

"Man, it feels good to be back in the open fields." I said, while smiling.

"It has been a while since we've been gone." Gel smiled at me.

I looked at her with my smile and nodded. "At least now I won't have to worry about Slime girls trying to get into my pants." I chuckled.

Gel giggled and held my arm, making her large breasts squish into it.

I stroked my hand down to open my inventory and took my map out. I looked at it to see where we are. We didn't seem pretty far from my house, and there are a few villages close to us, but I'll visit some time later on. I looked up in the sky, and saw the sun starting to get somewhat close to the horizon.

"We don't seem far from my home. We should get there before the sun sets." I said.

Gel nodded and we went off.

Little did the two know, purple eyes were hiding behind a tree. The eyes were focused on the young red streaked warrior with Gel.

"He's….cute." The being said, in a female voice.

(Play Opening 1- Crossing Field from SAO. English by NateWantsToBattle)

(The music starts up and seven colored stones swirls around the darkness. They collided and the title 'Minecrafts Human Spirit' appears. The screen goes white.)

I always admit the ways of my cowardly past

(The scene changes with Daniel standing on the cliff of Minecraftia, with the wind blowing against his hair and clothing.)

I can't help that

(He hold up his mother's pendant and clutches it tightly.)

And still I always act afraid

(He stares at the sunset and smiles.)

I'm oblivious and now it's back to haunt me

(Gel can be seen smiling at the human.)

Forever

(Daniel looks at his reflection, and sees his mother and grandfather standing next to him.)

Countless skies that I've painted

(Seen, from far, a man looks down at the young human with his smile.)

Surely, this is where my heart

Finally doesn't fall apart

(Seven large objects are seen in the back, and they all opened their eyes, each glowing with power.)

Won't fall apart

(A human was seen. When he opened his eyes, they were glowing white, and smirking evilly.)

Jumping high from my dreams I'll fly

(Daniel is seen in the forest, slashing his sword around against Zombies and other dangerous mobs.)

no matter what the cost

(A large Ender Dragon appears.)

Today I'll find a way to shake off all the pain

(He faces off against it, but then it starts to crush him. Then, the man from before gives Daniel new power and becomes stronger than before.)

Within my dreams I'll touch the sky

(Daniel charges at the ender Dragon, with his sword in hand.)

But I still realize

(He runs on the tail and starts slashing away at the dragon.)

I won't survive the fight

(Gel and some other mob girls were seen, smiling at the camera.)

Without you by my side

(In the shadows, another human with two iron katanas on his back was seen. He looks at the camera slightly, and smiles.)

You give me light when I have lost my way

(Daniel was standing on the cliff, with the seven large objects in the back of him, while the mob girls stood next to him, with smiles on all of their faces.)

I fall asleep 'cause I always find you in my dreams

(Daniel opens his eyes and faces the evil man, while the seven gems swirled around him and he roared, absorbing their power. Aura flows and he charges.)

I'll always be right next to you

(Daniel was lying on a tree, with the girls, who were smiling and lying next to him.)

I'll give you everything I have

(Daniel smiles at the sunrise, and we see the pendant, shining in the sun.)

[Opening ends]

I was walking back to my house while pushing Gel's wheelchair. After our time in the Slime Kingdom, it was good to be back home. At least now, I won't have to worry about the Slime girls trying to fuck me. Still though, I should try to to help Gel get her recovery go faster. Maybe some healing potions should help out.

When we got back to the house, I found another chest, surrounded by four torches. Inside was a brewing stand, along with some glistering melons, redstone, blaze powder, sugar, and gunpowder. I found another note and read it.

"*Use these to create different types of potions. Help everyone out with these. ~N"*

Okay, so this N guy is rewarding me? I'd like to meet him sometime.

"What's in the chest, Daniel?" Gel asked.

"Some items and a brewing stand." I answered. This is great. With this, I can make a healing potion to help Gel recover faster. But she could still

not move her legs without feeling pain. After collecting the items, we walked to the front door. I unlocked it and we both entered.

"Welcome to my home, Gel." I smiled.

Gel looked around the place, and smiled. "It's a very nice home you have."

"Pretty cozy. Not much, but better than nothing." I said as i open the door and pushed Gel in. We entered the family room and I took out my new brewing stand. Putting it on the table, I took out some of the ingredients.

"Okay….let's see if I remember this…" If I remember, to make a Healing potion, I need...a nether wart….and a glistering Melon. Nodding, I placed the two ingredients in. I took out a glass bottle and filled it with water. I placed it in and waited for the brewing to be complete.

"What potion are you making?" Gel asked.

"A healing potion to help with your legs." I answered.

After around a minute, the water turned pink. It was done. I grabbed the potion and sat down next to Gel. I uncorked the bottle and handed the potion to her.

"Drink this. This should help speed your recovery." I said.

She nodded and started to drink the pink substance. After she downed it, she coughed by the bitter taste.

"How do your legs feel now?" I asked.

Gel looked at them, and they didn't look as green as before. A little bruising, but looked a lot better than before.

"It doesn't hurt as much, along with my throat and jaw." She answered me.

I smiled. "Glad to hear that. Can you stand?"

Gel took a breath and slowly stood. Her legs wobbled a bit, but I supported her.

"Seems the Potion is helping out, but you should still take it easy. I'll give more healing potion after dinner." I said.

Gel nodded smiling and kiss me on the lips. I happily kissed her back. I was happy that Gel is my girlfriend. Very sweet, kind and gentle. I could have never asked for a better girlfriend.

"A new house?"

"Shh. We don't know if anyones home."

Two new voices got my attention. I broke the kiss and looked at the door.

"What's wrong?" Gel asked by my sudden change in attitude.

"We have company." As I walked to the door. I slowly grabbed the doorknob and my blade, in case if their dangerous. I swung it open and looked around.

"Who's there!?" I called out.

The area looked empty and quiet. The only sounds that can be heard were the crickets in the open lands.

"Hm. Must have been hearing things." I said to myself. I turned around-

"BOO!"

"AH! JESUS!" I screamed and fell on my ass, while my heart was going a mile an hour.

"Hahahaha! Oh man! Your face was priceless!" A girl voice laughed.

"That was so funny!" Another girl voice, older laughed as well.

I looked up and saw two new faces. One was a super pale girl with white hair and light gray eyes, her body type was muscular but not too much, still having a very curvy hourglass body. I was think she could kill somebody with just her hands alone. She wears a pair of light gray shorts, that stop to her inner thighs, and a vest, but it was open, revealing most of her breasts, and wearing no bra underneath. Her breasts were around probably an E-cup with somewhat wide hips, she was about 2 inches (5.08cm) smaller than me at 6"0' (182.88cm) ,and her back had a bow with arrow. She looked like she was 18.

The girl next to her was around my age, probably 19 at best. She wears a dark green sweater, with a black skirt, and white and black socks that go to her thighs. Her breast size was D-cup, and she has violet hair, tied to a ponytail that fell to her waist. Red gems on her hair, and her eyes were ruby colored. She was almost at my height, but shorter, around an inch (2.54cm) below me.

"That wasn't funny." I growled as I got up and dusted my pants.

The white girl giggled. "Sorry, we just had to prank you."

"Haha. Very original." I said in a sarcastic voice.

"Sorry. I hope we didn't make you angry." The violet haired girl said.

"It's fine. Just be careful from now on, to whom your pranking." I said with a small smile.

"Alright, let's start over. Hi, my name's Skelly. Princess of the skeletons." Skelly introduced herself.

"I'm Silk, Princess of the Spiders." Silk greeted with a smile.

"Pleasure to meet you ladies. My name is Daniel Blaze. I'm a human." I greeted.

Their eyes went wide. "You're a human!? No way!" Silk points out in shock.

"It's true, and I wouldn't lie to a pair of gorgeous ladies." I started, making them blush madly.

"Oh, are you a boy by any chance?" Skelly asked, while the inner lust in her was bubbling inside.

I chuckled. "Yes. I am a boy."

Both Skelly and Silk felt their blushes growing, along with their inner lust. Since Daniel was a guy, they have found someone who can give them a good time. They traced their eyes down, looking all over his body. His strong arms, his chest that can be seen through his shirt. His glittering sapphire eyes, his raven black hair and red streaks. The two were dribbling in their panties.

"I..um..girls, are you two alright?" I asked them, seeing them a little different than before...

Skelly and Silk had half lidded eyes, lust filled smirks and they were licking their lips, making me blush a little. They then walked up to me, swaying their hips and Skelly's breasts bouncing a lot every little move she made.

"*Oh, God help me."* I thought as they stood on each of my sides. They wrapped their arms around me and their breasts squished against my sides, making me blush harder and feeling a familiar feeling in my thighs. No, stay out of this boner, go away goddammit!

"A real human boy. I like it."~ Skelly cooed as she grinded her body a little.

"I hope you don't mind if we….get to know you more.~" Silk purred as she glided her hands around my chest. Then a block of wood hit both of the girls in the face.

"OW! Who did that!?" Skelly growled and looked to where the blocks came from. The two looked to see Gel, with a glare.

"What are you two doing to *MY* boyfriend?" She questioned them.

"Oh, hi Gel." Silk smiled at the slime princess.

"You three know each other?" I asked.

"Yes every princess know one another but why is she in a wheelchair?" Silk questioned.

"Apparently, due to the slimes back at the Slime kingdom, things… *cough*, went a little chaotic." I answered while I blushed to what happened.

The two thought over to what I meant, until their eyes widened and their blushes turned deep crimson.

"OH...My...You mean you two…" Silk started.

Gel blushed heavily, but she slowly nodded, remembering what happened.

"...How big was he?" Skelly asked.

"Um….2-26 pixels (inches) (66.04cm)." She answered quietly. Their eyes nearly popped out of their faces. They looked at me, while I blushed hard.

Skelly smirked and her lust was just thinking of how good of a fuck Daniel gave Gel. If she wasn't massively turned on from before, she was now.

"That big, were you?" She questioned with lust in her voice. "Well, I hope you don't mind….if I have a ride with you." She whispered in my ear, and gave it a lick, making me shiver.

All I could do was blush furiously. "But you would be in outrageous pain and your organs will be destroyed. I nearly destroyed Gel's legs."

"Well, her slime can change the length and size, so I can choose what I want it to be." Skelly explained, her smirk never leaving.

Before I could talk back, my stomach let off a loud growl.

"Sorry. Guess I didn't get anything to eat since we left." I chuckled.

"Well, it is late evening. How about we go in and have some dinner?" Gel suggested.

"Good idea." I nodded. I looked at the two. "You two ladies like to stay around?"

"Of course." Silk chirped.

"I wouldn't mind having some dinner with a sexy human like you.~" Skelly said.

"STOP IT SKELLY!" yelled Gel as she wheel her way into the house.

"Don't deny it, Gel. You find him sexy as well." Skelly giggled as they entered the house.

Gel blushed, but she turned away, trying hard to deny it.

"Now, ladies. No fighting in the house." I said as they all sat at the table.

"Sorry." Gel apologized.

"It's fine, Gel." I smiled and kissed her forehead, causing her to blush, but smiled softly. "Now, go ahead and chat while I start making dinner." As I left to make dinner, the girls chatted.

"So, Gel. How long have you two been in relationship?" Silk asked.

"Well, we've been dating just yesterday. He's very sweet." Gel explained while she smiled and blushed by his kindness and kisses.

"I want a piece of that hunk." Skelly smirked.

"Can't you ever control your hormones!?" Gel snapped at the Skeleton princess.

"You know I can't do that. He's very sexy." She answered.

Gel grumbled.

"Come on, Gel. I'm only being honest." Skelly placed a hand on her shoulder. "You know for the fact you can't deny how sexy and handsome he is."

Gel blushed, but she knew Skelly was true about the young man.

"Besides," She gently grabbed her chin, making her eyes lock onto her, "I wouldn't mind sharing him with you. After all, I am attracted to you as well.~" She then kissed her fully on the lips, making her eyes shot open.

"Banzai!" Silk cheered with her arms up.

Gel felt relaxed by the kiss and pushed back. She can't deny the fact that Skelly is beautiful, and she was attracted to the other princesses, since she was Bi as well.

A little later, Skelly broke the kiss and smirked at the slime princess. "Well?"

"I….I guess I can share him, but he needs to be okay with it first. I don't want him to be freaked out that he has someone else in his harem." Gel mentioned.

"I want to be part of the Harem as well." Silk says.

"The more the merrier." Skelly smiles.

Gel smiled and nodded.

"Dinner's up!" I called and came to the table with pasta and garlic bread. "Hope you ladies are hungry." I placed the food down and sat next to Silk and Gel. I made sure to have Gels bread soft so she can eat it. I put some pasta and bread on a small bowl and placed it on the ground, allowing sapphire to eat. We all dug in.

"This is so good!" Silk said eating her dinner.

"I never thought you were such a chef." Skelly smiled while eating.

I chuckled. "Well, I learn from the best." I said as I ate.

Sapphire ate his dinner happily. Gel too was enjoying her food as well. It was nice to have dinner with others. It gets lonely to eat by myself.

After finishing up our supper. I placed the plates in the sink.

"Any of you up for some dessert? I made cookies." I called from the kitchen.

"Sure!"

"Yes please!"

"Make them hot!"

I smiled and brought a plate of cookies out and placed them on the table while the girls sat on the couch. I went back into the kitchen and opened the fridge. However, I cursed under my breath.

I was out of milk. I sighed in frustration and walked back to the couch and sat next to the girls. "Sorry, ladies. I'm afraid I don't have any milk. I could have sworn I got some before I came here."

Skelly thad a creepy smile on her face and said, "That's alright. We brought some with us."

"Huh?" I questioned. Then I got what she was thinking, and I blushed.

She then undid the zipper on her vest and her large breasts popped out of its cloth prison.

[Very long Lemon warning]

"THE NETHERWORLD SKELLY!" Gel yelled out while she blushed.

"S-Skelly, please put your vest back on." I said, looking away from her bust.

"Awww, no need to be shy. I'm just giving you some milk. I'm not going to hurt you." She slyly smiled and cupped her fleshy orbs.

"I...Well…" I couldn't find words to this.

"Please?~" Skelly begged with puppy eyes.

Her eyes sparkled and looked so innocent. God, why do women have such a way with men?

"*Sigh* Fine, you win. Just stop with the look." I said, and Skelly smiled.

"Are….you sure you're okay with this, Daniel?" Gel asked.

"It's not like I haven't seen breasts before. If she's okay with this, I have no problem with it either." I stated.

Skelly then grab my hands and pulled them on her breasts. My heart missed a beat a little, when my hands made contact with her skin. Her bust felt cool to my touch, smooth, and silky and so soft.

Then she grabbed a cookie and held it to my face. "Open wide.~" then she took my hands and forced them to squeeze hard fondle with them. The cookie went into my mouth and I chewed. And milk come out of her nipples and landed on my face as smiled.

"Drink up.~" She grabbed my head and my lips made contact with one of her hard nipples. Going along with it, I sucked it, and her milk washed into my mouth. It tasted pretty sweet. Not to thick, not too light. It was just right.

Skelly moaned while she stroked my hair. "That's it, sweetie.~ Suck as much as you want.~"

Gel and Silk watched the entire time and were blushing. The two felt jealous that she was getting the attention. They too wanted in on it. Then I put both nipples in my mouth as I suck on them hard she then threw her head back and moaned louder and pulled my head closer, trying to get me deeper into her lovely bust.

"OH, Notch, Daniel.~ You're amazing.~" She moaned in pleasure and she was getting wet. I let go of her nipples and swallowed the last of the cookie and her milk. Skelly panted with a heavy blush.

"That...was….amazing." She sighed.

I chuckled. "Your milk was sweet." I looked at the other two, who looked jealous.

'That is so not fair' both of the girls thought.

I smirked. "You ladies want me to do one of you next?" I questioned.

"YES!" The two blurted out. They looked at each other and glared. I chuckled and grabbed another bite of a cookie. After biting it, I smirked.

"Who's first?" I asked.

"ME!" They blurted out again. They glared again.

"I want him to do me first!" Silk snaps.

"I'm his girlfriend! I'm next!" Gel countered.

"Now, now." The two calmed and looked at me. "Why bother doing one of you at a time," I smirked. "When I can do you both?"

They blushed heavily at the idea, and they nodded to that. Silk pulled her sweater off, and her breasts were covered by a dark purple bra. She unhooked it and her breasts swung free. Gel slowly took the top part of her dress off, and her larger breasts swung free.

"...Whoa" I breathed as I looked at Gel's E-cup and Silk's D-cup breasts.

'They're so beautiful' I thought.

I then scooted over to the girls and put each one on each one breasts as I started to play with them. The two gasped by this, but they each started to coo by my soft touch.

"Oh, wow. This is what it's like to have a boy touch me like this.~" Silk moaned.

"Oh, I love this. Don't stop, Daniel.~" Gel moaned.

Then I put both the remaining breast in my mouth. I felt their milk enter and burst on my taste buds. Their milk together tastes so sweet. I loved this. As long as the girls were okay to this, I was too.

Gel and Silk moaned in pleasure, as they softly stroked my head, telling me to keep going. Their cheeks burning with blushes, and their breathing was heavy. Then I heard a 'zip' sound as Skelly was unzipping my pants.

I broke away from the busts and looked at her. "Skelly?"

"Shh...relax, handsome, and let us take care of you.~" Skelly cooed and pressed me down on the couch. Skelly got my pants off and took my underwear as well. My manhood sprung out, hard from the breasts I was feeding off of. It hit Skelly in the face send her to the ground.

"Skelly, you okay?" I asked her.

Skelly got up and looked at my throbbing dick. Her eyes locked onto it, and her mouth was drooling. Silk was also drooling at it, while Gel was blushing deeply.

"So big…" She got back up and softly stroked it, causing me to moan.

"Save some for me." Silk said and stroked along with her.

Gel looked at me, making sure I was okay with this. I smiled and nodded. My manhood doesn't hurt as much from before, but I still have to be careful with her slime.

She smiled as well and started stroking my cock with the girls. All three hands glided up and down my rod, shooting pleasure down my spine.

"Oh, god, girls.~" I moaned out.

Skelly moved in and started licking my rod, earning more additional powerful pleasure down my spine. Silk and Gel were not far behind and I felt all three warm, wet tongues gliding across my dick.

"Daniel, can I show them our trick?" Gel asked.

I smiled. "Sure, but use a little bit of it."

Gel got up and kissed me deeply. Her tongue dancing around mine. I happily kissed her back and her slime entered my blood. I felt the same funny feeling and my manhood grew, along with my balls. My dick reached at 10 inches, little more thicker than before, and my balls were at the size of baseballs.

Both Skelly and Silk drooled by my new size.

"And you said he can get bigger by your slime powers." Silk said, while she stroked it.

"We don't want it to get any bigger for the moment. I'm still recovering after what happened." I explained.

Gel moved down and joined the two with pleasing their lover. I sighed and leaned back, enjoying my treatment.

The three rose up a little and they squashed their breasts between my hard rod. I gasped, by feeling pairs warm orbs of flesh pressing against my cock. It felt so damn good. They began to please me again and move together, having their breasts engulf my entire manhood.

"Holy shit you three, this is amazing.~" I groaned.

Whenever my tip comes out, they would lick it. They too were enjoying this as well. Their tongues met every time my tip would sink back into their breasts. When their tongues met for the third time, they started to have a three way kiss. They moaned as their tongues danced around each others.

It was all a lot for me to start cumming, and I was getting close. "G-girls...I'm gonna…."

They stopped kissing and looked at me with lust in their eyes.

"Cum for us, sexy.~" Skelly purred.

They stroked their tits harder against my dick, and I groaned loudly and shot my hips up. The tip came out and splattered my cum all over their faces and breasts. They moaned and tried to catch as much as they can in their mouths.

Soon, I calmed and lied back down, panting from the second best orgasm I ever had.

The three licked each others breasts and kissed one another, swapping their saliva and my cum in their mouths. After they cleaned up, they

pulled me up and snuggled against me, with their breasts squishing against my chest and face.

"That was amazing.~" Skelly cooed while stroking my hair.

"I never want to leave now." Silk smiled while stroking my chest. "Daniel, we talked for a while, and me and Skelly want to be part of your relationship with Gel."

I blushed by that. "Gel, are you okay with this?"

Gel smiled and nodded. "I don't mind sharing you with the others. Besides, it makes things more interesting."

I smiled and nodded. I sighed and leaned against their breasts.

THUD

A sound came from the other side of the room. I jumped up from the couch and turned to the source.

It was a girl, around 20. She looked pretty skinny, and she looked very tall about 1 foot (30.48cm) taller than me . Her clothing was an oversized black sweater that went down to her thighs and the sleeves cover her hands. She was wearing loose black pants. Her hair was brown, and wore a black beanie hat with purple blocks on it. Her eyes were purple as well. Her breast size was K-cup. They were huge, bigger than Gels.

"Who are you and how did you get in here?" I asked while pulling my pants up.

She was just looking at me not saying a word or moving. Her purple eyes glittering and staring into mine. The others looked to who was there.

"Daniel, don't look into her eyes!" Skelly called out in panic.

"Huh?" Before she could answer, the girl was gone.

"Where did she-OOF!" Something tackled me and I fell into the wall. I felt two huge orbs pressing against my face. Two long arms holding me in a tight embrace.

"Ma mff(What the)!?" I muffled in the squishy orbs. In panic, I grabbed what was in my face. However when I gave them a squeeze, I heard a moan. That's when I realized what was in my face.

It was a pair of breasts in my face.

"Endy, get off him! He can't breathe!" I heard Gel call out.

Out of relief, the black orbs moved and I gasped for breath. I coughed, having to finally breathe in fresh air again.

"Are you okay?" A voice asked.

I looked up and saw the girl, who was looking at me in concern.

"I'm okay, just shocked to what just happened." I then blushed. "Also, sorry for touching your Breasts."

She then gave a very confusing look that was on her face. "My what?"

"Your breasts." I pointed to her bust. She looked at them and cupped them.

"Is that what these are called? What was that weird tingle I felt?" She questioned.

The girls grew shocked to this, I was also surprised.

"Endy, you mean you have never been touched before, or had sex?" Skelly asked in shock.

The girl, now named Endy, turned to her and asked, "What's sex?" she asked innocently while tilting her head.

We all fell over by that question.

Skully then got up and suddenly smiled seductively. "Why don't we show you?" She walked over to her, swaying her hips as she did. She got behind her and grabbed her clothed breasts.

Endy gasped by the sudden touch, as Skelly slowly kneaded them like dough.

"Oh Notch, this...feels….amazing…." Endy slowly moaned and started to relax.

Now it was a fivesome. I was in heaven now.

Skelly continued to massage the girl's breasts and started licking and kissing her neck, further letting off more moans from Endy.

Skully smirked and grabbed her sweater, slowly pulling it off. Her sweater came off and her beautiful naked breasts swung free from its cloth prison.

"*Holy shit…."* I thought. My boner was getting big again. So many breasts around me.

Skelly fondled with one, while taking the other into her mouth, sucking it.

"Oh my...what have I….been missing out on….for all these….eons?" She moaned in pleasure.

"A lot." Silk smirked and started sucking on the other.

Gel then did something bold. She walked up to Endy, and pulled down her pants, revealing her wet womanhood. She then started massaging her firm but gorgeous ass, while kissing her deeply.

Endy closed her eyes and kissed her back, moaning loudly into her mouth.

All I could do was watch and get harder and harder. Dear god, this show was… soooo sexy…

Silk and Skelly moved their hands down and started massaging her pussy. Endy squeaked in the kiss and bucked her hips by the new powerful sensation of pleasure. The two smiled and thrusted their fingers in her warm wet hole.

Skelly then looked at me. "Say Daniel, do you mind… helping out a little bit?~" She asked, licking her lips.

"Umm...w-what do you want me to do?" I asked blushing deeply.

"I want to see how well your tongue is, when it comes to licking a girl.~" She explained.

My blush grew. "I...Are you sure she'll be okay with it? I don't want to push her into things she's not comfortable with?" I asked.

Skelly giggled by my concern for the girl. "You are such a cutie.~ I'm sure she won't mind.~" She looked at the Ender Girl, lost in pleasure while Gel continued to kiss her and massage her ass.

Gel broke the kiss with Endy and I heard her say something.

"Let me know how it feels.~"

"Okay, your choice…" I reluctantly got up and gave her womanhood a few licks on the outside, causing her to moan loudly.

"Oh, fuck.~ More.~ More.~" She moaned while begging. Gel smirked and kissed her hard again, while stroking her back.

I opened her legs more, and I dove my face into her wet hole. My tongue glided around her warm holes, tasting her fluids. She tasted like black berries.

Endy moaned louder and wrapped her arms around Gel, pulling her closer in the kiss and wrapping her legs around my neck, making sure I don't escape.

Silk and Skelly stroked her slim stomach while they continued to suck on her tits.

I grabbed her ass and pushed deeper into her pussy.

After around a full minute of this, Endy broke the kiss and screamed at the top of her lungs, and came hard. Her juices splashed like a waterfall on my mouth and cheeks. I drank her juices while we all continued to massage and kiss her.

Finally, she came down and leaned against the girls, panting heavily, with her cheeks very red. She then look at me with a new feeling that she has not felt before.

"How do you feel, Endy?" I asked.

She grabbed me and kissed me deeply, tongue gliding in my mouth, tasting her own juices. I kissed her back and stroked her hair.

Silk, Skelly and Gel moved close to us and kissed and licked our necks and cheeks. Their hands gliding around our bodies, making us moan in our kiss.

I broke the kiss, and stared deep into her violet eyes. They looked so beautiful. She, and the others looked beautiful.

"How about we take this to the bedroom?~" Skelly massaged Endy's breasts.

"..." Endy remained silent, but her eyes were hazy.

"Endy, I want to make sure you're comfortable with this. You don't have to be pushed into this." I said with care in my voice.

Endy's eyes glowed purple and I felt dizzy. I then looked around and saw we were in my bedroom. My bed was a queen size, so it was big enough for us to fit in.

Endy pushed me onto my bed and pounced on me. She kissed me hard and grinded her naked body against mine. Giving in, I kissed her back and wrapped my arms around her waist.

Endy broke the kiss and looked deep into my eyes. "Please….please make me feel good." She whispered with innocence and begging in her voice.

I smiled and stroked her hair. "Of course, Endy. Let me and the girls take good care of you."

Skelly and Gel gently took her by the arms and made her lie down on the bed. Her head pressed against the pillows, as the girls began to please her. As I crawled up to Endy she was look at me like generally happy. She look at my pants and saw my boner and blushed. "W..what's in your pants?"

"*Why is she so innocent why?"* I thought with a warm smile.

I took off my pants and let my manhood stand erect. I saw her blush furiously.

"Oh my…." She breathed.

"What are these?" She looked at my balls and started to reach for them.

But when she grabbed them, she grabbed them way too hard…like a death grip grab.

"OW!" I let out a long shout of pain, as I closed my eyes and started to rock back and forth, trying to ease the pain.

"Are you okay?" She asked in concern. I didn't reply. I just kept going back and forward.

"Daniel, are you okay?" I heard Gel ask, worried. Once again, I didn't reply.

I breathed heavily when she gripped them too hard. I sighed deeply and the pain was mostly gone.

"You have to be very careful and gentle with my balls, they're the most sensitive part of a man." I said.

"I'm sorry. I didn't mean to hurt you." Endy said while tears started to form.

"Hey, it's alright." I kissed her, calming her down. "You didn't know. It was only an accident."

Endy softly smiled by my kind heart. I was still in pain but I can push threw it.

"Now, be gentle with them." I softly instructed.

She nodded and looked at my balls again. She gently cupped them in her hands and fondled with them.

It stung a little, but it felt nice. "There you go. Nice and easy."

She leaned forward and licked one of them. It shot pleasure in me and I moaned. Endy looked at me in concern if she hurt me again, but I smiled.

"It's okay, Endy. You didn't hurt me. It felt nice. Keep going." I encouraged her with a soft voice.

Endy nodded and licked my balls again. I sighed in pleasure as I stroked her hair. My manhood throbbed in excitement. The ender girl looked at my throbbing rod and gave it a kiss.

"Oh, Endy. That felt nice.~" I moaned.

She smiled and kissed it again, then she had a weird feeling to licked the hole on the tip of my penis. When she licked the tip of my manhood, I moaned from that incredibly-sensitive part of my rod. She licked it again, receiving more of my moans.

Skelly and Gel were kissing and holding each other, their large breasts pressing against each others, as they moaned in pleasure. Silk masterbated while she watched, rubbing her pussy and her breasts.

Endy felt like she can do something else with my cock. She then opened her mouth and took the tip of my manhood with it. I gasped and moaned louder.

"Holy shit, Endy.~" I groaned in pleasure.

Her lips shifted a little, knowing that she was smiling. She slowly bobbed her head up and down a little, while her tongue swirled around the tip. I moaned and stroked her hair. This felt amazing.

Endy started to take in more of my rod and sucked a little harder. It was getting good, however, I felt her cough a little.

"Woah. Hold on, Endy." I quickly said.

She released me and looked up in concern. "Did I do something wrong?"

"No, you're doing great. I just learned that your gag reflexes are not strong." I explained.

"My what?" She questioned.

"If you put something in your mouth and not swallow or suck correctly, you'll end up not breathing, or you'll vomit." I explained.

"Oh, I'm sorry." She apologized.

"It's alright. Just take this slow." I softly said to her.

She nodded and took my manhood back in her mouth. She went slower than before, but the pleasure was still amazing.

"That's it. Take things slow." I said, and focused on pleasure.

Silk watched us while Endy continued to pleasure me. She saw Endy's womenhood dripping with her juices. She smirked with lust and crawled over. She opened her legs and started licking and kissing her puffy lips.

Endy squeaked by the feeling, btu she moaned and sucked on my tip, and swirled her tongue around.

"Oh yeah, Endy. That feels so good.~" I moaned and caressed her cheeks.

Silk caressed Endy's inner thighs, as she pushed her tongue into her warm hole. She moaned and her tongue swirled faster around my tip. Her hands fondled my balls softly, feeling like feathers are gliding across them.

"Shit...Endy, I don't think I can….hold much longer." I grunted.

She looked up at me. "What's about to happen?"

"I'm about to…….cum if you keep doing that." I moaned while my hands opened and closed by the pleasure.

"You mean….like this?" She licked the tip and gently squeezed my balls.

"ACK!" I grunted loudly and my cum shot out, spilling all over her face. Endy grew surprised by the white substance.

"Woah. What is this stuff? It feels sticky, and slimy?" She questioned while she felt my cum dribble.

Gel and Skelly crawled to her on each of her sides.

"That my dear Endy, is his hot cum.~" Skelly whispered, and licked some of it off her face.

"Best stuff you could ever taste.~" Gel cooed, licking it off as well.

Skelly cupped Endy's face and kissed her deeply, allowing my cum to enter her mouth. She tasted my white stuff, and moaned. She kissed her back and tried to get as much as she could.

Gel grabbed Silk and pulled her up. They kissed each other and swapped cum from their mouths.

I watched while my boner got hard again. The girls finally finished with their kissing and looked at my dick.

"Endy, the next part of our little show, is having sex.~" Skelly whispered, massaging her breasts. "Let me show you how it's done.~" She crawled to me and pressed me down on the matt. She crawled on top of me and lined her pussy with my cock.

"You sure you're okay with this? I don't want to get you pregnant." I said with little concern.

Skelly giggled. "You're very sweet, Daniel. The good thing is, you can't get us pregnant. We mob princesses can control our bodies. We can choose if we want children or not." She explained.

I sighed, happy to hear I won't get her pregnant, if she doesn't want kids yet. "Well, I'm glad you won't be."

Skelly smirked and grinded her outer lips against my rod. "Now, less talking, and start fucking me. Give me the ride I dreamed for.~"

I smirked as well and grabbed her hips, and she slowly pushed my manhood deep into her wet pussy, making us both moan in pleasure. She then gasped in pain when she was almost in.

"Take it slow, Skelly." I said in a soft voice.

She smiled and nodded. SHe gave one last push and her hymen broke, She hissed in pain and tightened her fists on my shoulders. Blood leaked from her lips, indicating I took her virginity. She panted and waited to get used to my size.

I massaged her breasts and body, helping her ease her pain. After around a minute, the pain was gone. She looked down and she smirked at me again.

"Get ready.~" she said with lust.

Then, she started thrusting up and down, making us moan continuously.

"Oh notch! This feels better than I even imagined!~" She moaned out as she bounced on my hips.

"Shit, Skelly, you're so tight!~" I groaned and pulled on her breasts.

Endy watched while her blush grew. She watched the two of us pleasing each other, while the warm sensation in her womanhood returned.

Gel saw this and smirked with lust. "How about I help you relax?~" Gel pushed her down and opened her legs. She entwined her legs with hers. She scooted closer to her, and then their slits made contact.

Endy gasped by the new level of pleasure. Her pussy lips pressing against Gels felt so good. Gel smiled with half lidded eyes.

"Relax, and enjoy the ride.~" She gripped Endy's leg and started grinding against her. The Ender girl could only gasp and moan with every thrust by the slime girl. It felt so amazing.

Silk didn't want to be left out. She then had an idea and smirked. She crawled to the two and spread their legs a little.

"Silk?" Gel asked.

"You two are gonna love this.~" She got her legs through the open areas of their entwined legs and sank down, allowing her pussy to make contact with the other two.

They all moaned loudly at the same time. This took Tribadism to a new level.

"Oh my notch, Silk. This feels so hot.~" Gel moaned and rubbed her pussy against the other two.

Endy bit her lip and started to push back with her own thrusts. Silk smirked at the endergirl and started grinding her hips against them. What the three girls can do right now, is focus on the pleasure and please each other.

Skelly continued to bounce off my hips, as her breasts continue to swing with each thrust. I grabbed her ass and plunged deeper into her with every thrust.

"Aw, fuck! More, Daniel! Fuck me until I break!~" Skelly moaned loudly.

I latched onto one of her breasts and sucked hard, tasting her milk again. She threw her head back and moaned louder. I gave her ass a good slap, and that's what she needed.

"I'M CUMMING!" She screamed and came hard. Her juices splashed around my waist and her warm walls clamped around my rod, hoping to milk any of my seed. She panted hard, but I was far from done.

I flipped her over, catching her by surprise. She looked at me in shock, and I smirked at her.

"We're far from done, my little skeleton princess.~" I started thrusting again, hard and fast. She screamed in pleasure and gripped me hard as I rode her.

Gel gripped Endy's leg tighter as the three grinded faster, adding warm friction in their pussies. Silk grabbed Endy and pulled her up. She kissed her deeply, while she returned it. Their breasts pressing together, nipples grinding. Gel pulled up and joined in the kiss. Their tongues danced in a three way.

"This is amazing.~" Endy moaned as Silk massaged her tits.

"Fuck...F-faster girls.~" Gel moaned.

The three grinded harder, making their slits slap against each other. Their clits brushed against one another, shooting lighting of pleasure down their spines. They gripped each other tightly, feeling their climax approaching.

"I'm gonna cum!" Silk moaned while her eyes rolled back.

"I...can't….hold this….feeling in me." Endy groaned.

"Let's all cum together girls. Together.~" Gel gripped them both.

They gripped each other like they were going to disappear from existence. Their pussies spamming, close to release. They grinded to the max, panting and groaning for their sweet release. Finally, it happened.

"AAAAAAAAAAAH!" The three princesses screamed in pleasure as they came together. Their cum splashed everywhere, all over their their thighs. They kissed each other hard and continued to thrust into each other, keeping their sweet release going. Finally, they let go of one another and Silk and Gel lied down on Endy's breasts, panting heavily by their incredible love making.

"That….was….amazing." Endy panted.

Gel smiled and stroked her cheek. "We're more than happy to please you anytime, Endy. You're part of the harem."

"If you ever need to release, talk to us." Silk smiled while fondling with her breast.

I continued to pound Skelly, until I reached my limit and came deep into her womb. She moaned loudly, feeling my warmth spread into her body. She smiled and kissed me deeply for my work.

"Alright Endy. Your turn." Skelly told her, and rolled aside.

She cautiously crawled behind my manhood.

"You ready?" I asked. She nodded.

I slowly thrusted into her, making her moan.

"Oh my notch… this feels so good…~" she moaned.

I kept thrusting until I hit a barricade.

"Ow, that hurts. What's that?" She asked.

"Since you're still a virgin, you have what's called a hymen. It's a wall blocking anything from getting inside you. I'll have to break it, and it's going to hurt, but we'll help you." I said with a warm smile.

Endy let off a small whimper. "Okay…"

She turned around and embraced me, slowly thrusting forward. She started grunting in pain, so I kissed her deeply. Soon, I broke her hymen and she let off a small scream into my mouth.

We all comforted her by stroking her hair, cheeks, and breasts.

"I-It hurts." She whimpered.

"I know, but the pain won't last forever. It will sting for a bit, but it will be gone in a few seconds. Just relax." I cooed while stroking her hair with a warm smile.

She nodded and waited. Each of the girls kissed and massaged her body, helping her ease the pain in her body. After around a minute, she finally calmed and didn't feel the pain anymore.

"I don't feel it anymore." She said.

I smiled. "Good. Now, relax, and enjoy this moment."

The girls crawled backwards, and let me and Endy have it.

I started thrusting into her, making her moan.

"Oh….my….this feels….incredible.~" She moaned as I thrusted slowly.

I smiled and thrusted a little more faster, increasing the pleasure. She moaned louder and her luscious breasts bounced with each thrust.

I panted, and latched onto one of her breasts, suckign on one, and squeezing the other. Endy cooed in pleasure and hugged me while I continued to please her.

"F...faster!~" she commanded.

I thrusted faster.

"H...harder!~" she yelled.

I thrusted harder.

"OH YES! FUCK ME, DANIEL!~" She screamed, while her mind broke, only can feel pleasure now. I thrusted hard and fast into her, and kissed her. She kissed back hard, with her legs and arms wrapped around me tightly.

Skelly then had a sudden urge to do something bold.

She quickly got behind Endy and started fondling and playing with her breasts, while kissing and licking her neck.

Gel got behind Daniel and hugged him while she kissed and licked his neck as well.

Silk got behind Skelly and fingered her pussy and kissed her cheek.

I broke the kiss with Endy and stared into her eyes. "Endy...I might cum again."

"I...Inside me! Nowhere else!" She yelled.

That was the green light I needed. I thrusted the fastest I can into her, and she screamed.

One last push, I yelled and came into her, with Endy screaming in pleasure, having to climax the second time. My seed injected deep into her. She shuddered by its warmth and gurgled, "So warm..."

I kissed her while the girls pleased her. After her orgasm died down, she panted. I smiled and gently placed her down on the pillows. She panted and looked into my eyes. The violet glittered in the moonlight, with her crimson blush adorning her cheeks. She smiled softly and watched for the rest of the night.

"You have two more girls to please, Daniel.~" Silks smirked and fondled with Gel's breasts. "Ready for another round?~"

I smirked at the two. "The question is, are you two ready?~"

Silk smirked and pounced on me, Her lips connected to mine and we sucked on each others tongues. My dick got hard again, and she smirked, pleased that I recover fast. She lined up her slit against my dick and without even going slow, she slammed her hips down, taking my dick with one go, breaking her hymen at the instant.

Silk hissed in pain, but surprisingly, she started thrusting up and down. At that, her pain slowly turned into pleasure, and she moaned.

"D-Damn, Silk. You're very bold, aren't you?" I moaned.

"S-stupid pain is not gonna get in my way in having sex with you.~" She moaned.

Gel crawled to me and smirked. "I want you to eat me out, Daniel. I'm still recovering from before, so use tongue.~"

I nodded and she sat on my face. I grabbed her hips and thrusted my tongue into her pussy.

"Oooooh.~ So good!~" She moaned and grinded her hips in my face.

Silk started swirling her hips around, adding new additional pleasure to her womb.

"By Notch, I wish you came here years ago, Daniel!~ Everything in our lives were so lonely without a boy like you!~" Silk moaned while she fondled with her tits.

Gel moaned and started to play with her clit. I slapped her ass, making her squeal in pleasure.

"Oh, Daniel!~ I'm so glad we're together!~" Gel moaned.

Skelly was spooning Endy, fondling with her breasts and her pussy, while Endy moaned. The ender Girl turned around and kissed her while their breasts pressed together.

Silk pounded harder against me, hearing the sounds of our bodies slapping against each other.

"OH! OH! OH! POUND ME DANIEL!~" I heard Silk scream. That only encouraged me to go faster.

Gel grabbed Silk and pulled her into embrace and kissed her hard. The Spider Princess gave into the kiss and they fondled with each others breasts.

Skelly rubbed Endy's pussy and squeezed her breasts as the two watched the threesome going on.

"This is so hot.~" Endy moaned as she watched.

"OH YES! FUCK ME LIKE A SLUTTY WHORE!~" Silk screamed.

Holy shit, I've never heard her talk dirty. That just increased my lust however. I started pounding her the hardest I can now. Every thrust hit her G-spot. Gel rubbed her clit and breasts, making her mind go blank.

"Fuck...I'm gonna…" I groaned.

"Let it out, sexy.~" Silk said in a sultry voice.

That was all I needed to hear. After a few more thrusts, we both came. Gel wasn't far behind and came as well.

Their juices sprayed in my face and thighs and my cream injected deep in Silk's womb.

"Oh, notch.~ It's so warm." she cooed.

[Lemon end]

After a few more thrusts, it was all over. I fell on the bed and panted heavily. I never felt this tired before. This was even better than back at the Slime Kingdom. I was doing this with the girls I cared about, and they cared for me.

Gel and Silk gently grabbed me and placed me on my pillow. The four girls gathered around me. Gel on my right, Skelly on my left, and Endy on my chest with Silk.

"That was the best fucking I've ever done on my life.~" Silk whispered while stroking my chest.

"That was so sexy. I will always be available to this all my life.~" Skelly smiled while caressing my calves.

I chuckled. "You four are the best thing that ever came into my life."

They giggled. "Well, expect to have more of the princesses in our Harem, sweetie.~" Skelly smirked.

"As long as they're okay with it, I have no problem." I said.

Endy let off a cute yawn. "I'm tired."

I smiled warmly at her. "Let's all get some sleep."

They agreed and snuggled close to me. Gel and Skelly moved a little and they used their breasts as pillows for me. Silk and Endy moved up to get comfortable, and Endy's huge melons pressed in my face, btu I was still able to breathe.

"Goodnight, ladies." I whispered.

"Goodnight.~" They whispered.

Soon, we felt at peace and we all fell into slumber.

(Elsewhere)

The man watched the young human sleep with his lovers. He chuckled.

"Looks like the princesses will be taking a liking to him, by his kind heart." He said while stroking his beard.

"N," The man turned around, and saw the other, with eight large shadows behind him.

"Ah, you all finally came." N smiled.

"What is the matter at hand, N?" One of the large beings asked.

"As you might not know, I have brought my champion to my world." He explained.

"You mean…" One of them asked.

"Yes." N nodded. "He will be the one that will defeat my brother."

"What does he look like?" Another asked, with a teenage male voice.

"That is him." N pointed at the young warrior with his girls.

"Oh my, he's really cute." One of them said in a female voice.

"Cute? He looks so sexy. I wouldn't mind being part of his Harem, with his girls." Another female voice said, licking her lips.

"I will admit… the girls look really sexy." Another being said with a male voice.

"Cut it out guys, we have work to do." A wise voice said.

"Now, are you all willing to help Daniel out, and fulfilling his destiny to stop my brother?" N questioned.

The large beings nodded.

"Good. It is time...for The Elemental Dragons...to rise." N said.

Starshine89: AAAAAAAND THERE WE GO! Man, that lemon took a lot out of us.

Sonic3461: Amen to that, but when we work on it together, it makes things more interesting and fun.

Starshine89: Indeed. And wow, this chapter only took us ONE DAY to complete!

Sonic3461: We all hope you enjoyed this chapter. Sorry we haven't updated in awhile. I want to thank Starshine89 and Cosmicsafe74 for helping out.

Cosmicsafe74: It was great helping out Sonic3461, but by the Light Realm will the girls let him fight or have fun with him?

Starshine89: A question only Lord N can answer. Thanks for reading, guys.

Sonic3461: Stay tuned for more! As always, follow, like and comment! Give these two support and thanks for being part of the team for my story. See you all next time in the next exciting chapter of Minecrafts Human Spirit!

All: PEACE!

Cosmicsafe74 skate in his black and crimson scopedog to the sunset.

Sonic3461 smirks and vanished in the air.

Starshine89 pulls out two iron katanas and slashes the screen with them and it cuts to black.

7. Chapter 7

Chapter 7: The Village and a new….Human!?

I felt warm, and so comfortable. Suddenly, I felt pleasure shot into my body. I moaned softly and opened my eyes. Silk, Gel, Skelly and even Endy were stroking my manhood with their breasts.

"Is this how I do it?" Endy questioned.

"You're doing great sexy.~" Skelly said with lust and kissed her.

"Morning ladies." I smiled.

They all looked at me.

"Morning.~" They all greeted with lust in their voices.

"You like your wake up call?~" Silk asked while licking her lips.

"Oh yeah. Best wake up I've ever had," I moaned softly.

They all smiled and licked the tip of my dick. I moaned louder and bucked my hips up.

They all kissed each other, as they continued to please me with their tits.

"Ladies….I'm gonna." I groaned, feeling another climax approaching.

"Cum for us baby.~ Your little whores want your seed.~" Silk smirked.

I groaned and came on their breasts. My seed ejected and they moaned. They all kissed and licked each other clean. They cleaned my rod as well, as it shrunk down.

"That was awesome. I don't mind waking up like this from now on." I smiled.

The girls giggled. "Good to hear, because that's how we'll wake you from now on.~" Skelly smirked with lust in her voice.

I chuckled. "Well, we have a new day upon us. Let's get ready." I said as I got up from the bed, stretching.

"What are we doing today?" Gel asked.

I looked at them and smiled. "We're gonna go visit a village."

(Play Opening 1- Crossing Field from SAO. English by NateWantsToBattle)

(The music starts up and seven colored stones swirls around the darkness. They collided and the title 'Minecrafts Human Spirit' appears. The screen goes white.)

I always admit the ways of my cowardly past

(The scene changes with Daniel standing on the cliff of Minecraftia, with the wind blowing against his hair and clothing.)

I can't help that

(He hold up his mother's pendant and clutches it tightly.)

And still I always act afraid

(He stares at the sunset and smiles.)

I'm oblivious and now it's back to haunt me

(Gel can be seen smiling at the human.)

Forever

(Daniel looks at his reflection, and sees his mother and grandfather standing next to him.)

Countless skies that I've painted

(Seen, from far, a man looks down at the young human with his smile.)

Surely, this is where my heart

Finally doesn't fall apart

(Seven large objects are seen in the back, and they all opened their eyes, each glowing with power.)

Won't fall apart

(A human was seen. When he opened his eyes, they were glowing white, and smirking evilly.)

Jumping high from my dreams I'll fly

(Daniel is seen in the forest, slashing his sword around against Zombies and other dangerous mobs.)

no matter what the cost

(A large Ender Dragon appears.)

Today I'll find a way to shake off all the pain

(He faces off against it, but then it starts to crush him. Then, the man from before gives Daniel new power and becomes stronger than before.)

Within my dreams I'll touch the sky

(Daniel charges at the ender Dragon, with his sword in hand.)

But I still realize

(He runs on the tail and starts slashing away at the dragon.)

I won't survive the fight

(Gel and some other mob girls were seen, smiling at the camera.)

Without you by my side

(In the shadows, another human with two iron katanas on his back was seen. He looks at the camera slightly, and smiles.)

You give me light when I have lost my way

(Daniel was standing on the cliff, with the seven large objects in the back of him, while the mob girls stood next to him, with smiles on all of their faces.)

I fall asleep 'cause I always find you in my dreams

(Daniel opens his eyes and faces the evil man, while the seven gems swirled around him and he roared, absorbing their power. Aura flows and he charges.)

I'll always be right next to you

(Daniel was lying on a tree, with the girls, who were smiling and lying next to him.)

I'll give you everything I have

(Daniel smiles at the sunrise, and we see the pendant, shining in the sun.)

(Opening ends)

A new day was upon me, Gel and the others. It was really crazy. I have four girlfriends now, and they said I'm getting more in the future. Ha, if the men could see me now, they would be crying.

Anyways, after we dressed, we had breakfast. I gave Gel another Healing potion to help with her legs. She was making a great recovery. She can finally stand on her feet, but she can only walk. Giving her a few more healing potions through the next two days or so, she'll be back to her usual self.

After that, I collected my sword, some items, food, water and other supplies. After collecting our stuff, we exited the house. Like before, I saw another chest with four torches. I opened it and found 20 iron ingots, a few arrows and a crossbow. Another note.

"*I overheard you're going to travel with your group. Take these ingots, arrows and crossbow and use them to create tools and armor. Stay safe, and your real trial will begin." -N*

I smiled. After storing my items in my inventory, and making one last check to make sure we have everything, we set off. I pulled out the map to check where the closest village was.

"Hmm, according to the map, we should be able to get to the village in about 10 minutes, as long as we stay on the right path." I said to the girls.

We walked through the forest, hearing the birds chirp in the warm morning air. While we headed to the village, Silk and Skelly held my arms, making them sink into their breasts. I just chuckled and shook my head.

After walking through the forest, we came into an open field. We could already see the vil-

"CREEPER!" I heard Gel shout.

I looked back and saw a creeper about to explode. We jumped forward, not wanting to get caught by the blast, and we landed as the creeper blew up.

We looked back and saw dozens of creepers approaching us.

"Shit! We're surrounded!" Silk said in panic.

I pulled out my sword, ready for battle. I wasn't going to go down without a fight. The creepers got close enough and started to spark.

"Enough!" A female voice called out. The creepers stopped glowing. They moved aside and a girl walked forward to them.

The girl looked around 18 at best. She was wearing a green hoodie, covering up her body and inner thighs. I believe she was wearing very short black pants that stopped to her thighs like Skelly. She wears black socks that stopped to her mid thighs. She has orange hair and amber colored eyes. Her breasts were around a DD-cup size.

"Who are you?" I asked.

"Sorry about my Creepers traveler. They just go after the first thing that isn't a mob." She said.

"Cupa! Is that you?" Silk asked.

The girl, now named Cupa saw Silk and smiled. "Silk. It's been a while."

"You doing good?" Silk asked.

"Been okay." Cupa nodded. She looked at me with interest. "So, who's your friend?"

"This is Daniel. He's a human." Silk smiled. Cupa's eyes widened in shock.

"A human...and, he's a boy?" She asked in surprise.

"Sure is." Skelly smirked while holding my arm.

Cupa looked all over my body, then a smirk formed. I know where this is going.

She walked over to me, swaying her hips as she did do. She go close to me and pressed her chest against mine. Her breasts squishing against my chest.

"Well, handsome, I apologize about my creepers." She said in a sultry voice.

"It's okay. No harm done." I smiled a little with a blush.

"Also, my name is Cupa, Princess of the Creepers. Daniel is it?" She asked again.

I nodded.

"Hm, a very arousing name for a good looking human like you.~" She traced her fingers around my chest.

For the love of God stop please I can't do this now.

"Sorry to break up the small talk," Gel said, getting their attention. "We have some business to attend to at the Village."

"Traveling huh?" Cups smirked. "Mind if I tag along? I haven't gotten good company in a while.

I sighed. "Fine, just don't blow anything up." I said while putting my sword away.

"Anything for you, cutie pie.~" Cupa whispered in my ear.

With Cupa now part of the team, we moved on to the village. When we got there, I wasn't expecting what I was seeing.

Instead of those big nose dudes that make weird sound and do nothing but trade with you….the villagers were….girls.

Each of them had the same colored hair, brown, and the same colored eyes, brown as well.

One of them was wearing a green dress with matching gloves that go up to her shoulders, and her breast size was at a C-cup. She was one of the Vanilla Villagers, standard.

The next one was wearing a purple dress, seeing she was a Priest, bust size at E-cup.

Another one was a Librarian, wearing a white dress and holding a book, breast at F-cup.

One in the fields was a farmer, with a brown dress. Her orbs were a D-cup.

Another was a Blacksmith, working. She was wearing a black Apron. Her bust was C-cup.

The other one was a Butcher, wearing a white dress and apron. Her breasts were E-cup.

Everyone of the girls in the village, either a farmer, or one of the other, looked the same, along with their bust size. Some of them were actually communicating.

"Did you hear about the little guy?"

"You mean the little wolf? Yeah, I did."

"I hope he will be alright."

"Yeah me too."

"Hey, check out the new guy."

"Wow, he's pretty cute."

"Yeah, he looks hot."

"I can't believe another human is here."

Time out! Did they just say… *ANOTHER* HUMAN?!

"Daniel, are you okay?" Skelly asked, seeing my shocked face.

"D-Did you hear what they just said?" I asked them.

"Which question?" Cupa asked.

"They said… *another* human is here." Their eyes went wide.

"Welcome to the Sunny Vanilla Village." A green dress villager came up and greeted up with a smile. "It's been awhile since we have visitors. We hope you will enjoy your stay here."

"Thank you ma'am. That's very nice of you." I smiled, making her blush.

"I'm Vanilla. One of the local villagers here." She greeted while holding her hand out.

I smiled and took it, but shocked her when I kissed her top hand. "Daniel Blaze. A pleasure milady."

Vanilla blushed heavily by this. She giggled and retreated her hand. "A gentleman. How sweet."

"These are my friends. Gel, Skelly, Endy, Silk, and Cupa." I gestured to the five princesses behind me with an open hand.

"We're his girlfriends." Skelly said, as she grabbed me, along with the other three. Cupa could only smirk.

"*Oh, he has a Harem, eh? Well, I won't mind sharing him. I too would love to be with him."* She thought with dirty images of him, her and the others in a gang bang.

"Oh, you have a Harem? You are one lucky man." Vanilla smirked.

I chuckled while I blushed. "Well, just looking out for my girls."

Vanilla giggled. "Well, how about I show you where you all can stay for the night? You all must be tired from your journey?"

"We recently got here by a few minutes ago, but we can stay for a while." I smiled.

"Excellent. Please follow me." We followed Vanilla through the village. While we did, many of the villagers were watching me. Some that had medical dresses were rushing into a house. I was wondering to what they were doing.

"Hey, what's going on over there?" I asked, pointing at the house.

"W..we found a wolf out in the field and had a cub with him. The wolf could barely move. He had cuts, scars and a few broken bone." Vanilla explained.

All of us looked concerned for the young one.

"Are he gonna be okay?" I asked.

"I hope so. Our medical team is doing whatever they can to help." She explained.

"Are they using any potions?" Gel asked.

"We tried to make some potions, but we are low on ingredients. We don't have enough to make any Healing or regeneration potions." The villager explained further.

They don't have the ingredients. "Vanilla," She looked at me. I opened my inventory and selected a few stuff, from warts, glistering melons, and Ghast Tears. "I have the ingredients you all need to make the potions."

Vanilla gasped in surprise. "Y...you're willing to give us all this? Not even for a trade?"

I smiled and shook my head. "Take these and help the little cub out." I handed the ingredients to her. She was still surprised, but she smiled.

"You have such a kind heart, Mr. Daniel. Thank you so much." Vanilla thanked.

"Don't mention it. Just happy to help." I smiled.

"Medic!" Vanilla called. One ran up to her. "Take these and get started on a Healing and regeneration potion, stat!" She said and handed the items to her.

She nodded and ran to the house, the items in hand. We all followed her and entered the house, seeing the cub. The part that shocked me was that was an anthropomorphic wolf with light green fur.

After a few minutes, the potions were done. After they made the potion a splash potion, they poured it on the scars of the cub, and they healed in no time.

The cub slowly opened its eyes. They were light gray with a hint of blue. It let off a small groan.

"wo bin ich?" The cub mumbled.

"Is the cub okay?" I asked.

"He'll be alright. The potion just needs to take its effect is all. A few hours and he'll good as new." Vanilla smiled. "Still, we can't thank you enough."

"Like I said, I was more than happy to help." I smiled back. "Still though," I looked at the cub, "It's unusual to see an anthro wolf cub. And I've never heard that language before either. Where do you think he came from?"

"Not sure ourselves, what did he say?" Vanilla asked.

"I think he said something like wo bin ich i don't know what means. What I do know, is that he's speaking in a different language." I explained.

"Can you understand it?" Gel asked.

"Afraid not. The only languages I know are English and Japanese. The language the cub is speaking is known to me." I explained.

The cub then yawned and slowly fell asleep.

"We'll worry about it later. Right now, let's have the cub rest up." I said, watching the little guy rest.

They all nodded in agreement and we left the house. Vanilla showed us around the village a little, until showing us the Inn where we'll be resting for the time being. The area looked pretty big. A warm fire, a few cozy chairs, and a few paintings. However, what caught my interest, was a door. It had bold letters that read, "REST".

"*Rest? What kind of name is that?"* I questioned in my mind. I decided to ask later.

Vanilla showed us the room we'll be staying in.

"Since you all are in a Harem, you can take the biggest room we have." Vanilla smiled. The room had a huge bed, big enough to fit two extra if we wished. A window of the village, a table, a few chairs, a small table with a speaker and a few record disks, and a...pole?

We all placed out stuff on the bed, but I kept my sword on, since i still want to be on guard if trouble is near.

After putting our stuff down, we all left our room. As we did, we heard the doors open. l looked at the front and I gasped.

It was another human who looked like he was 19, he had long black hair that went over his left eye, where a shade of white could be seen. He had hazel eyes, wore a black tank top, wore black sweatpants, and had blue running shoes, along with black wristbands. On his back were two iron katanas. When he saw me, he was surprised too.

"No….fucking way!" I shouted out.

"Took the words right outta my mouth, dude. Are you a human!?" he asked, surprised.

"Yeah, I am. I thought I would never meet another human in this world." I said as me and my girls walked up to him.

"Well, surprise, there are other humans in Minecraftia. You ain't the only one, bro." he said.

I chuckled. "Well, it's great to finally have a human here. My name's Daniel Blaze." I greeted holding my hand out.

"Name's Adam Thomas Starshine. Nice to meet you." he said, shaking my hand.

"And who are these beauties here?" Adam said with charm in his voice.

"These are my good friends. Gel, Silk, Skelly, Endy and Cupa." I mentioned to the Princesses.

"Hmm… now where have I heard those names before…" He said then went wide-eyed.

"Hold up. Are you girls the princesses of your mob kinds?!" He asked, shocked.

"That's right. You know us?" Gel asked, quite surprised.

"I read this book about you girls." Adam pulled open his inventory and took out the book, that looked like mine when I first came here. "I never

thought I would actually meet any of you girls in person. What are you all doing here actually?"

"We're traveling with our boyfriend." Skelly answered as the girls held me, making me blush.

Adam raised an eyebrow. "*Our*? Wait…" he then smiled. "Duuuuuude… four girlfriends? *Four*? "

"Ehehehe. Well, you know." I chuckled. "Hope you're not freaked out by this."

"Freaked out? Dude, I'm freaking jealous now. How does someone get four girlfriends? I mean, sure, lots of girls like me too, but ma-ha-ha-haan, I didn't expect someone to start a harem here. Good on you, Daniel." he said, hitting his chest twice.

"Well, I'm glad you're not freaked out by this." I smiled. "I'm sure you'll get a girlfriend too." I stepped forward and whispered in his ear, "Word of caution, if you ever want a slime girl as a girlfriend, be careful if you ever go to the Slime Kingdom."

"Why is that?" he asked.

"They can be….chaotic and aroused by a boy." I whispered, shivering over what happened.

"Lemme guess… they all want to bang you?" he asked.

"Pretty much." I nodded, making him blush by the thought.

"I'll be careful if I ever visit, then." Adam said.

"Good." I smiled and nodded. "So, how long have you lived here in this world?"

"Two months. I got teleported here when I downloaded a mod for my game, but then it sent me here. I didn't mind though, I was alone back

where I came from." Adam explained.

"Dude, the same thing happened to me. I thought some asshole put a virus on my game when I downloaded the same mod." I said.

"Wow. In a way, we have to thank him then." he said, chuckling.

"Maybe, but I still want to know why we're here in the first place." I started rubbing my chin.

"Well, I have a theory." Adam said. We all listened.

"My theory is, we've all heard of…" he then whispered. "Herobrine… have we not?"

The girls shivered violently by that name. Herobrine. I know him. He's a very dangerous player. It is said that he's the brother of Notch, the creator of Minecraft. The two didn't see eye to eye, and Herobrine causes havoc all over the game. Very few have ever survived him.

"You really think that's the reason?" I whispered.

"It's possible." Adam shrugged his shoulders. "It's not pleasant when you see him."

We all then went wide-eyed.

"You mean…. You've seen him?" Endy asked.

Adam nodded. "I remember it as if it happened yesterday…."

Flashback: 7 weeks ago

Adam was walking through the fields at night with his swords in his hands, looking for materials. He was a trained swordsman, so he could defend himself at any time.

He put away his swords and got out an iron axe and chopped down a tree. When he looked to his left… that's when it began.

He looked up at a cliff, and Adam's eyes went wide at what he saw.

It was a man with brown hair, a cyan shirt, blue pants, and black shoes. His eyes were glowing white.

It was Herobrine.

Adam found himself staring for a moment.

"Holy shit… he's real…" he said to himself quietly.

He got out his phone and zoomed in to take a picture to reveal to people who don't believe in him that he is in fact real.

As he took the picture, he forgot to turn the light off, and it flashed. Herobrine snapped his head to the source of the light.

Adam panicked and quickly put away his phone and ran, not looking back.

Flashback end

"...when I came back here, I didn't see him anymore. Since then, the villagers have created a specific rule for this, and I quote: *Never explore alone. Always in groups.* End quote." Adam said.

"Do you still have the pic?" I asked.

Adam nodded and got out his phone and unlocked it. He went to the pic, and we were surprised.

"Holy notch. That's really him." Gel said in shock.

"Damn. No one has ever survived from Herobrine and lived to tell the tale. Even the mobs are scared of him." Silk pointed out.

"I could only think of one thing: run for my life." Adam said, putting his phone away.

"We better be careful from now on, when we're traveling. If we ever come across him, we better be ready." I said to the girls.

They all nodded in agreement.

"There was another time I ran into him. I was mining in one of the caves..." Adam mentioned.

Flashback: 2 weeks ago

Adam went down the mines to find some diamonds. He had his diamond pickaxe out, which had Efficiency III and Silk Touch I.

Adam hopped down and found a lava area.

"Now, if I'm correct, Diamonds should be around here somewhere." He said to himself.

He then saw an opening, and saw three diamonds.

"Yeah! Diamonds!" He cheered. He ran over to the diamonds, and as he was about to hit the block with his pick, he heard a footstep.

He turned around and saw him, standing right in front of him.

The soulless eyes of Herobrine stared into his terrified, hazel eyes. Adam knew he was a deadman. That's what you get for mining alone at night again.

Adam closed his eyes, waiting for his death.

…

…

...anytime now…

…

POOF

Adam jumped back, and yelped, when he heard the sound of something pop. He finally opened his eyes, and looked around. He was surprised that he was alone again.

Herobrine was gone.

He dropped his pick and ran away, not caring about the diamonds anymore.

"Fuck this shiiiiiiiiit!" he yelled, running for dear life.

Flashback end

"After that, I never wanted to mine alone in the caves ever again." Adam shivered at the thought of looking into the demigod's dead, glowing eyes.

"Damn. Two encounters with that son of a bitch and you're still alive. Lady luck must have liked you from those times." I said in amazement.

"It all depended on fate. So, you all staying for the night?" Adam asked, changing the subject.

"Might as well. We can stay for one night to plan where we should go next." I explained.

"Mind if I come with you guys? It gets boring traveling by myself. Besides, I don't wanna end up as goo after I encountered Herobrine twice." Adam piped in.

"Of course." I smiled and nodded. "As they say, the more the merrier."

"Sweet!" Adam cheered.

"By the way we found a...kid that spoke a different language. It was something like 'wo bin ich'. Do you know what it means?" I asked.

"That's German for "Where am I?" Adam answered.

"So that was german." I said cupping my chin.

"Is the kid okay?" Adam asked.

"He was injured when he was found, but we gave him some potions to heal his wounds. He'll be fine in a couple of hours." I explained.

"Well, glad he's in a better condition." Adam smiled.

I smiled as well. Then, I heard a door opening. We all turned to see the 'REST' door opening, with one librarian and Priest walking out, while holding each other's waist.

"Hey, Adam, have you ever been behind that door?" I asked gesturing to the 'REST' door.

"Not that I know of." Adam responded shaking his head. "I've never seen that door before while I lived here."

"That means it's a new room added to the Inn." Gel pointed out.

"I'm curious about it. Any of you interested to finding out what's behind it?" I asked.

"I'm down with it." Adam shrugged.

We all walked up to the door. I grabbed the knob and opened the door. Inside looked very dark and quiet.

"I can't see anything in there." Skelly said.

"Look, there's light at the end of the hall." Silk points out. We did see light at the end.

"Well, might as well." I said.

We all walked in and then, the door shut on us, surprising us. However, the hall, glowed with a rosey red color. Lights being lightly powered by power torches.

"This is new." Endy said.

We all walked down the halls, as it continued to glowed slightly. As we got closer to the light, we started to hear music beating. We made it to the doors. I don't know what's behind the door, but we're all about to find out. Taking a breath, I pushed it open, and music beated louder in our ears. What we saw inside, just made our eyes pop out and jaws drop.

The room was huge. A few stages, with poles. Huge cushion like chairs, big enough to fit two people. There was also a bar, with a bartender. Music and lights flashing and hitting the areas of the room. That wasn't was making us shocked. This was.

Some of the female villagers were here. There were two on the stage, swinging and dancing around on the poles, and they were wearing tight small bras and panites. Some were on the chairs, kissing each other passionately, while one or two pairs were moaning and licking or grinding against each other.

"Ho….ly….shit." I breathed out.

"How can this be hidden?" Adam asked himself while a massive blush covered his face.

"Oh, we have new guests." We looked and saw a villager, that looked like Vanilla. "Welcome to the REST: Releasing Every Sexual Tension you can imagine." She smirked.

"Thank you for the greeting, but I just realised, I have to go find a friend of mine who got lost in the woods and my friends here were going to help." Adam calmly said, secretly winking at me.

"Y-yes. We would love to stay, but we have to go." We both turned, but two villagers blocked our way.

"Oh, you can't fool us that easily, boys.~" The villager smirked while licking her lips. "You two don't need to be shy. We won't bite….unless you want us to.~"

"We're not shy, we just don't want to lose our virginity yet!" Adam blurted out with a massive blush.

"Hate to break it to you, bro, but I lost mine to my girls." I said, blushing.

Adam sighed. "No way out now."

"Wanted to save it for someone you love?" I asked.

"Pretty much." Adam answered as each of us sat on a chair. I sat next to Adam. They felt really comfy to be honest.

"You and I both. I wanted to save my virginity for a girl I can love, but apparently, it didn't go as well as I thought." I explained, remembering the slime Kingdom incident.

"Are all girls like this?" Adam asked.

"Apparently so. Boys and humans haven't been seen for years in Minecraftia. Due to that, the girls have all gone bisexual." I explained, making Adam blush madly.

"Great, now I'm going to have dirty thoughts. Thanks a lot, brain." he said, annoyed.

"Best thing you can do, is try to get used to it." I said. "Took me a while to get used to something like this. Since my girlfriends don't mind

sharing me, and have fun with other girls, nothing's gonna stop them."

"Good for you. I've lived in this village for four days, but I haven't seen girls make out with each other." Adam said.

"Guess they show a good job hiding it." I said looking around the room. "But trust me, you'll find a girlfriend you will love. After what happened with me and Gel, we became a couple, followed with the others."

"What… happened, if you don't mind me asking?" Adam asked.

"Well, Gel and I were caught in a crossfire with a group of horny slime girls. They injected her with their slime powers, and they hazed her mind, making her beg for sex. She had no control over herself, and….well….I'm sure you know the rest." I said blushing.

"So that's how you lost your virginity. Yikes." Adam said, blushing.

"Gel was beating herself up after she realized what happened. After I calmed her down, I told her I cared for her. After that, we became a couple." I smiled.

Adam smiled. "Well, good for you man. You guys are really fit for each other. Anyways, what happened next?"

"After that, Rot, Prince of the Zombies came to the kingdom, demanding to hand over Gel, and a few slime girls, wanting to use them as nothing but sex slaves." I growled at the rotten prince. "We refused his demands and a war broke out. By a miracle, we won. Slush, the king of the kingdom, honored me and said I was welcomed to visit anytime." I explained through my story.

"Man. This Rot guy sounds like a dick." Adam growled.

"How can he be a dick, if he doesn't have one?" I joked smirking.

"Touché, hahaha!" Adam said, laughing.

I laughed as well. "Man, it feels great to talk to you. I haven't spoken to my own kind in a while."

"Amen, brother. It's been two months for me." Adam said.

Then, the lights in the room dimmed a little, and a new song started playing.

"Oh man, here we go." Adam whispered, feeling a little nervous about this.

"Don't worry, bro. You'll get through this." I whispered.

[Lime Warning]

The curtains opened, revealing seven villagers on the stage. Each wearing different colored bras and panties. There was one normal, two Librarians, one butcher, two Priests, and one farmer.

They all looked at me and the group, with lust in their eyes, smirking and licking their lips, eager to get started on us.

Adam and I were a little nervous, Gel was blushing madly, Skelly was smirking, along with Silk and Cupa, and Endy was curious to this.

The seven villagers walked forward, swaying their hips, making their breasts bounce with each step.

"May God have mercy on our souls." I whispered to Adam.

"Amen." Adam said.

Each of the villagers gathered to each of us. Adam and I got the Librarians, Gel got one of the priests, while Endy got the other. Skelly got the butcher, Cupa with the farmer, and Silk got the normal one.

My girl opened my legs and slowly moved up, grinding her body against mine. When she got to eye view, she winked, making me blush.

Adam's librarian sat on his lap, and started grinding against him. She pressed her breasts against his face, rising the heat in his face.

Skelly happily opened her legs, complying to her partner. The butcher smirked and pressed her ass against her thighs. Skelly moaned as her villager partner was grinding her ass against her heated pussy.

Gel felt her priest partner gliding her hands all over her green skin. She shuddered by the touch, but squealed when she grabbed her breasts and slowly kneaded them.

Cupa was following the movements of her farmer villager with her hips, as they kissed passionately, rolling their tongues around in a dance.

Silk was gliding her hands around her partners body, from her breasts, her legs and her thighs. Her villager moaned and swayed her hips sexily while her hands were behind her back.

Endy's priest partner presented her leg to her. She glided her soft hand around it, all the way to her butt, rubbing it hard, moaning slightly. Endy was blushing while she watched. Her villager smirked and grabbed one of her hands she glided them across her leg, letting her feel the texture and softness of her leg.

The villager lap dancers continued to tease us all with their sexy lap dances and slow stripping.

Adam's partner smirked and unhooked her bra, allowing him to see her full naked breasts. His face was now as red as a tomato.

'*Holy shit… boner, stay down!'* Adam thought.

The poor boy gulped loudly, seeing full naked breasts in person. She glided her hands around the soft squishy flesh, moaning slightly.

She then grabbed his hands and allowed him to touch them. Adam felt his breath tighten when his cool hands made contact to the warm soft

flesh of her bust. His face exploded red. She allowed him to squeeze them, making her moan louder. She grabbed his head and sunk him deep into her cleavage.

Adam felt like he was going to get a full red face if this keeps up.

The Librarian smirked and grabbed one of his hands and glided it down to her ass, making him squeeze it.

"*OhmygodOhmygodOhmygodOhmygod."* Adam's brain was going into overload.

However, he was saved by a miracle.

The music stopped, signaling it was over until next show.

"Oh, such a shame." Adam's partner cutely pouted. She pulled back, letting Adam breath in fresh air. She smirked at him. "If you ever want to have a good time, cutie, come find me.~" She gave him a peck on the lips and the villagers returned to the curtains, while they swayed their hips.

[Lime End]

Adam panted heavily, face burning red, and feeling a tightness in his pants. He was grateful he didn't lose his virginity though.

"Well, that was certainly something." I said as we got up.

"That was great. I so wanna come back here more often when we're in the neighborhood." Skelly smiled.

"I agree. That was a lot of fun." Silk smiled as well.

I looked at Adam, who was still in a shocked trance. Damn, he looks like he's in the same position I was in when this happened to me.

"Pretty new to you, huh Adam?" I asked him. He looked at me with his still red face.

"Tell me about it. I thought I'd have to penetrate her here. I will admit, it was sexy, but it was completely unexpected…" he said.

"I know what you mean. Just be grateful we're not at the Slime kingdom. The slime girls will have sex in public if you're not careful." I pointed out.

He darted his head towards me and went red. "Seriously?!"

"Dead serious. And if they feed you their slime, they will make sure your dick and balls grow, and it's painful if it get's too big." I added blushing.

His face was now redder than a tomato. "Holy shit."

"Well, I don't want you to get a heart attack. Let's leave before the next show starts." I said, not wanting him to pass out over a heart attack.

"Agreed." Adam ran out, and he was pretty damn fast.

"Woah. He's quick on his feet." I said in surprise.

We all left the REST area, and exited the Inn, getting some fresh air in our lungs.

Adam was pulling out a water bottle and drank the whole thing in one go. He sighed heavily, while most of his burning blush went down.

"Like I said, Adam. You'll get used to it soon." I said patting his back for comfort.

"I hope so." He sighed.

"Now, it has been a while since he healed the cub. How about we go visit the little guy, and see how he's doing?" I suggested.

We all nodded to the idea and left to the house. As we entered, the cub was awake, looking around the room.

"Adam, go on and talk to him, and see what he knows." I said.

He nodded and stepped forward.

"Hallo, wie geht es dir?" Adam asked the cub.

The cub grew surprised that he can speak the language he knows. He talked back, "Mir geht es gut. Was ist passiert?"

"Sie erinnern sich nicht?"

"Nein."

Adam rubbed his chin, and then asked the cub, "Hast du eine Familie?"

"ähm ja" he said.

"Wo sind sie?"

"Meine Mama und Papa sind aus ... den Wald."

Adam smiled. "Registrieren Sie ihr helfen."

The cub's eyes lit up and he wagged his tail happily. "Wirklich?! Vielen Dank!"

Adam looked at us. "We're going to help the cub find his parents. They lives in the forest near here."

I smiled. "Then let's go."

We left the house with the pup following. We all entered the forest. I was getting a little antsy, but we have to find the cubs mother.

"Adam, how much further?" I asked.

"I'll ask him." He turned to the cub. "Wie weit noch?"

"Nicht mehr weit." He replied.

"Danke." He turned to us. "He said we're not far."

We then arrived at an opening in the woods.

The cub looked at us and smiled. "Danke für Ihre Hilfe, Jungs."

"So, this is where we need to be?" I asked.

"That's what the little guy says." Adam said.

Suddenly, a portal appeared in front of us.

"Holy Shit!" Adam yelled out in surprise.

"On guard, everyone!" I commanded and pulled my sword out.

Adam stood next to me and pulled his katanas out. The cub hid behind his legs, while the girls stood ready.

What we saw scared the living shit out of us. This thing that was coming out of the portal was massive, about 8'4" (254cm) tall, this thing had a wolf skull painted on its head that marked Death's arrival, it body has black with some crimson on it, its "eyes" were black with tiny crimson dots on it,its look like it had a 4 foot (121.92cm) long great sword on it left hip with a look of what look like it had six guns along with a shovel. Judging by its appearance, we think it might be a male because of how its body shape was under the armor. Holy shit, how does this thing walk?!

Then come out another was definitely female by her body build. Holy shit, her breasts! They look like S-cups along with her hips and thighs looking incredible, it looked like she could break bedrock without even trying, due to how strong she looks. I'm not going pervert guys. Just pointing out how gorgeous she looks. She about 7'4" (223.52cm) with what look like a sniper rifle and a pistol, along with a firefighter axe. Her helmet look like a cheetah's skull painted on it and had the same eyes

the same as this giant , then just stare at us, making us feel a very uneasy.

"Umm...H-hello?" I asked in greeting. The cub ran up to them.

"Soilders vielen Dank." The cub said.

The girl looked down at him. She saw he was a little banged, but his wounds were healing fast.

"Hast du diesen jungen Cub verletzt !?" She snapped at us. In a deep and scary robotic voice

"Dude, what is she saying?" I asked Adam.

"She's asking us if we hurt the cub." He answered.

"Antworten Sie mir jetzt, wenn Sie Ihr Leben lieb!" She snapped again, getting angry.

"Talk to her, man." I pushed him a little bit.

"Umm...Ma'am, wir haben diesen kleinen Kerl nicht schaden. Er war alles, geknickte gefunden . Wir halfen mit seinen Verletzungen." He talked in German.

The women was silent for the moment, until she looked back at the cub and asked, "Ist das wahr?"

"Ja. Sie halfen mir mit meinen Verletzungen. Sie helfen mir, meine Mama und Papa finden." The little cub smiled and nodded.

The women was silent again. Out of our relief, she was relaxing a little. "Ich weiß, dass das menschliche mich verstehen können , aber die anderen nicht. Welche Sprache sprechen sie?"

"Lass mich fragen." The cub walked up to us and asked, "Welche Sprache sprechen euch alle?"

"Wir alle können Englisch sprechen." Adam answered to him.

The cub nodded and walked back to the girl. "Sie wissen, Englisch."

She nodded and looked at us. "Do you understand me now?" she asked.

"Yes, ma'am." We nodded.

"The villagers found your cub, injured. They took him in and healed him." Adam said.

The girl was silent again. Her helmet started to deatomize, and her face was shown. She was gorgeous. Actually, Drop-dead gorgeous. She was a white bunny with pink marking on her that looked like cheetah markings. She had short pink hair in a ponytail that fit in her helmet and she has what looked like a cheetah tail and her eyes they were glowing bright pink/crimson as her pupils look like cats.

"On my behalf, I wish to thank you for helping this cub." She thanked us with her thick silky Russian voice.

We were pretty shocked that she wasn't a human at all, neither a mob.

"Um, you're welcome. Ma'am." I nodded. "Um, if you don't mind me asking, who are you?"

"I'm private Mikhailov of the United Countries armed forces to my left is The General,the leader of the forces. We protect Earth and all of her planets sacred lives." She greeted.

"So you guys are part of the armed forces from Earth? I don't remember our Technology being *this* advanced." I said.

"Not advanced? What do you mean?" Mikhailov questioned.

"From what I know, our armies have never created weapons so advanced as yours, neither created the power to invent portals to travel." I explained.

"What year is it for you?"

"2016 A.D?"

"2017 A.F." She replied.

"How can that be?" Adam questioned. "If you guys are from the future, that doesn't explain anything. We don't have any anthro creatures where me and Daniel are from."

The girl's eyes widened, until they flashed with anger. "By the Goddess, you did not just call me that!"

"Woah, take it easy. What did I say?" Adam asked, holding his hands up in defense.

"Natasha stand down." Said the giant in a deep and scary robotic voice, making her blush.

"Y-Yes General." She said and calmed down.

"That word...the 'C' word, is that word an insult to you, if I may ask?" I questioned.

"Yes, and you're lucky the General and my Light One, is making me stand down, so I don't hurt you, or your friends." She snarled.

"Our deepest apologies. We didn't know it was an insult to you." I said.

"Sorry about that. I didn't know I insulted you in a way. I won't say it again. Promise." Adam said, rubbing his head.

"Make sure you watch your tongue, *human*." Natasha snapped at him.

"Man." Adam sighed and rubbed his head again.

"So, what are you two doing here?" I asked, changing the subject again.

"We came here to find the cub. Again, thank you so much for finding him." She said.

"Please make sure you look after him. He is still trying to find his parents." Adam stated.

The two nodded, and Natasha grabbed the cubs paw. They started to walk into the forest. The cub looked back at us one last time. He smiled and waved at us, saying goodbye.

"They certainly were an interesting trio." I stated.

"Amen, bro." Adam said. "What should we do now?"

"Hmm...how about we do some mining?" I suggested.

Adam's eye widened and he shivered. "I ain't going back down that cursed cave!" he snapped.

"Dude, relax. You said it yourself. You haven't seen Herobrine in two weeks. You showed up at the wrong place at the wrong time. Not only that, you have us now. You won't be alone when we go mining. Besides, we need to get material for tools." I pointed out.

Adam sighed. "You're right, I'm sorry for snapping at you. I just get very paranoid at times."

I smiled and patted his shoulder. "It's okay to be scared of things. That's why you have friends to support you and have your back."

Adam smiled and nodded. "Thanks."

I swiped my hand down and opened my inventory. I chose my crafting table and chose the sticks and iron ingots I got.

"Adam, do you have a Pickaxe?" I asked.

"I used to have a Diamond Pickaxe, but I dropped it after my encounter with Herobrine. Good thing I keep an Iron with me just in case." He said.

I nodded and created a few pickaxes. I made six, each of us get one. I checked to make sure I have my torches, since we're gonna be doing a lot of mining.

After making sure we have everything, we all searched for a cave. We found one, and it looked a little bit more bigger than before. Adam shivered and sweated a little, remembering what happened, but I patted his back, smiling at him. He calmed and smiled back.

We all entered the caves, and went a little deep, but not to far. Adam and I pulled a torch out to light the area.

"Okay, since we'll be here for a while, we should split into teams to find more material." I said. "Adam, you and Cupa are with me, Gel, you're with Skelly, Endy, with Silk. We'll meet up here in about two hours. Everyone good?"

They nodded.

"Okay, let's go." We all split up into groups and went down into different parts of the mine.

Adam, Cupa and I moved deeper, while I left torches to light the way.

"Look, Iron!" Cupa pointed out. We looked up and saw a few iron ores.

"Man, that bites. It's too high to reach it." I grumbled

Adam smirked. "I always think ahead in these situations." He then got out a Potion of Leaping, drank it, and jumped up and mined all five ores at once. He jumped again and mined two more.

Adam landed and looked at us, while I was amazed.

"Way to go dude. Nice of thinking ahead." I smiled.

"Thanks." Adam smiled.

SSSSSSSSSS

"Woah, what was that!?" Adam called out in panic, pulling his swords out.

"Creeper." I answered.

Cupa however, smiled. "Come on, sis. I know you're back there!"

"Sis!?" We asked in unison.

A black object moved and another creeper girl came out of the shadows. She looked like Cupa, but her hair was light green, and her breasts were an EE-Cup size.

"How did you know?" She asked smirking.

"Your hissing is a give away." Cupa answered.

Cupa's sister smiled and shook her head. She then looked behind her and saw us. However, her eyes locked onto Adam, he locked eyes with her too.

"Oh, and who's this cutie?" She asked, smirking at Adam.

"Uhh, h-h-hi, I'm A-Adam. *ahem* Adam Thomas Starshine." He answered, stuttering and blushing.

I saw Adam was stuttering and Blushing. That's when the pieces came together, and I smirked.

"*No way. Adam, you lucky dog."* I thought.

Cupa's sister smirked and walked over to him, slightly swaying her hips. Adam watched her hip movement, until he realized what she was doing and shook his head, blushing madly.

"*No! Bad Adam! Bad!"* He thought.

"Adam...a very cute name, for a very cute mob like you.~" She said in a sultry voice.

"To be fair, I'm a male 19-year-old human." He said.

Her eyes widened. "You're a human!?"

Cupa smirked. "Yep. And so is his friend."

She then smirked at Adam and quickly wrapped her arms around his neck, causing her huge breasts to press against his chest, causing him to blush madly.

"You're a human? Now, I'm very interested. So, cutie, do you have a harem?"

Adam's face was now red. "N-no, I'm single."

The Creeper girls smirk widened and pressed closer to his face. "That makes it better.~" She whispered in his ear, and gave it a slow lick.

Adam backed up. "Whoa, hold up, I don't even know your name, age, and social status." He said a bit jokingly.

"Oh, how rude of me." She smiled. "My name is Boom. I'm Cupa's sister, from the Creeper Kingdom. Age 18, and still single, but I don't mind sharing a guy with other cute and sexy mob girls." She greeted smirking.

Adam's face was now redder than a tomato. *'Shit! Bad brain! Bad fucking brain!'* A lot of dirty thoughts were running through his mind.

"So sis, what are you doing here?" Boom asked, as she held Adam's arm.

"I decided to travel with Daniel and the others. It's been getting boring in the Kingdom." Cupa explained.

Boom looked at me and I smiled. "Hello, Boom."

"Hello. Sorry, you're cute, but Adam is more cuter." She snuggled into his shoulder, causing him to shiver a little.

I laughed. "Hahaha! No offense taken. I understand if you have a different taste in looks with guys. He's all yours, Boom."

Adam's eyes widened and he turned to me and mouthed the words "Help me."

I only shook my head and smirked, causing him to glare at me.

"Go with the flow." I mouthed to him.

"So, since you're traveling, mind if I come?" Boom asked.

"Of course." Cupa smiled and nodded.

Adam quietly whimpered. *"I'm fucked. I'm LITERALLY fucked!"*

"Well, let's move on. We have a bunch of ore to collect." I said.

We all pressed on, with Boom now part of the group. Through our time, Boom would hold his arm, and sweet talk him. Adam was blushing up a storm and was acting all nervous around her, stuttering his words, while she giggled by how nervous he was. Yep. Those two are definitely gonna get together.

Mining through a wall, I stumbled across a room. It looked mossy, and there were a few chests in it. It looked like a Mob room.

"Hey, I found a room!" I called out.

The others came up and I mined through the wall. What took me and Adam by surprise, is that there was no mob spawner.

"This has to be a dungeon. But where's the spawner?" Adam asked.

I narrowed my eyes around. "Something doesn't feel right. The air feels...heavy."

STOMP

An earth-shaking stomp surprised us all. We turned around and saw a massive spider, markings that were glowing purple.

"Holy shit! That's a big Spider!" Cupa shouted.

The Spider hissed and hot string out and wrapped Cupa and Boom and grabbed them, making the girls scream.

"CUPA!" I shouted in panic.

"BOOM!" Adam shouted.

The spider tied them to its web, while the girls wiggled in fear.

"Alright, big guy, drop 'em now and I won't lay a finger on you!" Adam said confidently.

The Spider looked back at the boys and hissed. It shot poison at them.

"Look out!" I shouted as we dodged.

"Alright then. Time to make the chimi-fucking-changas!" Adam yelled and got out his swords. "Cue the music." He shouted pointing at the viewers.

[Music: F-777 - This Isn't Science Rocket]

I heard the music and looked at Adam in a weird way. "Ooooookay. That was weird." I turned back to the Spider and pulled my sword out, getting into my battle stance. "Okay, you overgrown bug! Let's dance!"

"Daniel, get close to me!" I did as he told me and he threw down a splash potion of Strength II.

"Hell yeah! Let's go!" I felt my strength growing and I knew we stood a chance to beating this bug now.

The Spider boss hissed at us and threw two web cocoons. They exploded and small spiders exploded out and charged at us.

Adam jumped up and tried to stab the spider but it shot him away, sending him crashing into the wall.

"ADAM!" I shouted. I turned back at the Spider and growled. "YOU'RE FUCKING DEAD!" I charged at the spider.

It hissed at me and the spider shot poison at me, but I quickly dodged the attacks. It hissed again and threw one of its arms out.

"SUCK ON THIS!" I roared and slashed one of its legs off, making screech in pain.

Adam got up and started crushing the small spiders with his feet.

Adam looked at the camera and smirked. "On a scale of 1 to 10, how would you rate this song?"

"Who the fuck are you talking to!?" I shouted.

"I'm talking to them!" Adam said, pointing at the readers.

I looked at the camera, and I realized what he was talking about. "Adam, don't break the 4th wall now! We have something important right now!"

"Sorry, it's kinda my thing in this fanfic." Adam said.

"HIT THE DECK!" We dodged another glob of poison.

The large Spider then let off another type of hiss. The smaller spider started to retreat.

"Huh? What are they doing?" Adam asked.

I watched them move, until they started climbing the web. My eyes widened in fear. "That bug is gonna have its offsprings eat Cupa and Boom!"

"OVER MY DEAD ROTTEN CORPSE!" Adam yelled and in the blink of an eye lunged at the tiny spiders.

One of the Spiders got to Boom, and its fangs dripped with saliva. Boom was shaking, but before the Spider could feast, it screeched in pain and fell, having its back cut off. Her eyes widened, seeing it was Adam that saved her. Her face exploded with a blush and her heart raced.

"YOU LAY ONE OF YOUR LEGS ON HER AND I'LL SHRED YOU APART LIMB BY FUCKING LIMB YOU WORTHLESS ARTHROPODS!" He roared with fire visible in his eyes.

The large Spider hissed at him and shot a web at him, catching his wrists. However, I dashed in and sliced the webs in half.

"Nice try, fucker!" I growled. I looked back at my human comrade. "Let's finish this!"

"Human style!" Adam said.

Adam and I charged in, with our swords in hands, and let off our battle cries. We slashed together, cutting off the Spiders legs. It screeched and fell to the ground, only having two legs left. It shot more poison, mixed with its web, But we slashed the webs away, and we smirked.

"IT'S OVER!" We shouted together. We charged in and cried out, with our blades ready.

"RAAAAAAAAA!" We trusted our blades deep in the spider's face, making it screech loudly and then, it fell to the ground, now dead. The arthropod exploded in purple dust and dropped a lot of experience points.

Adam looked at the camera again. "Stop the music. The spider's dead."

[Stop music]

"Seriously?" I asked while feeling a sweat drop.

"Okay, okay, I'll stop." He said chuckling. He secretly looked at the camera and mouthed the words "No I won't." while shaking his head.

After we finished the boss off, we focused at the next matter at hand. We cut both Boom and Cupa down.

Adam gently took the webs off of her, and she was finally free. "You okay, Boom?" He asked in a gentle voice.

Boom tackled him in a hug, making him blush in surprise. "Thank you so much. I thought I wouldn't make it."

The boy smiled and returned the embrace. "I won't let anything happen to you, Boom. I promise."

Boom looked at him, with a blushing smile. Out of the bloom, she lunged into his face and kissed him deeply, with passion.

Adam's eyes widened, but instead of backing away, he slowly closed his eyes and kissed her back.

I smirked, confirming the fact that Adam and Boom would be together.

"Daniel," I looked at Cupa, who grabbed my head and kissed me hard as well. It caught me by surprise, but my body gave into instinct and I kissed her back.

Cupa moaned in the kiss and grabbed a handful of my hair and prodded her tongue into my mouth. My tongue danced with hers and I stroked her cheek.

After a bit, we broke our kisses and smiled. I turned to Adam and winked at him with a knowing smirk.

He smiled and turned back to Boom.

"Funny… I never got to say that I thought you were gorgeous." Adam told Boom with a loving voice, making her blush.

"You're such a charmer." She smiled and hugged him again. Adam hugged her back, but she was secretly smirking.

"*Oh, my dear Adam. I'll be sure to reward you handsomely tonight."* She thought.

"Well, how about we grab what's in the chests and leave. I don't want to take any chances with another Spider coming out and attacking us." I pointed out.

"Good point." Adam dashed over to the first chest.

"Okay, let's see what we can find…." Adam started unpacking the chest. His eyes widened, and she shouted, "We just hit the Jackpot!"

"What's in the chest?" I asked.

Adam dug into the chest and presented to what was in it. There were 4 diamonds and 12 Emeralds.

My eyes widened. "Holy shit! We're freaking rich!"

"This was a successful mining hunt." Adam smiled.

"Well, we should probably head back up. We have been mining for a while, and we have special ore that can cover to what the others have found." I said.

"But there are two more chests. I gotta open 'em." Adam said deviously.

I sighed and smiled. "Okay. Make it quick."

Adam nodded and dug into the other two chests.

Inside the next chest was a compass, 4 buckets, 17 iron ingots, and 2 golden Notch apples.

"Dude, these are Notch apples! Fucking Notch apples!" Adam exclaimed.

"Those apples are really rare to make." I said in amazement.

Inside the last chest was an anvil, 3 books, 19 cocoa beans, and 23 wheat.

"We. Are. Lit." Adam said, trendily. I simply rolled my eyes and shook my head. After getting our stuff, we all headed off and left the room.

After waiting, we all gathered again, and Adam and Cupa introduced Boom to the group. We all collected a great number of material, from Iron ore, coal, and even some Red dust. After collecting our material, we all headed off, back to the village.

I sighed, tired from the battle and the mining. "Man, I'm beat."

Cupa smirked and held my arm. "You know, Daniel. I just have to thank you someway for saving me.~"

I blushed. "Uh, n-no, you don't have to, Cupa. I saved you because I wanted to."

However she didn't hear me and was thinking. "Hmmm….Oh, I know.~" She licked her lips, and she had bedroom eyes.

"*Oh man."* That was the only thing I thought as Cupa and the other girls grabbed me and dragged me to the bedroom. *"I'm fucked….LITERALLY!"*

The door closed and all that was heard was the sound of ripping clothes and slight moaning. Adam just smiled and shook his head. "Glad I'm not

in his shoes." He entered his assigned room, took his sword holder off his back, placed his phone on the desk, and plopped on his queen sized bed.

"Sigh, man, this has been one interesting, but great day." He said to himself, while lying his head on the soft pillow.

"And it's about to get better.~" A sultry voice cooed.

Adam's eyes darted open and widened. "Oh no." He looked up and saw Boom, laying against the wall. Her eyes were glittering, and a lust filled smirk was planted on her face.

"H-How did you get in here?" He asked.

"I snuck in before you came in." She answered. "But, let's not worry about that.~" She started to slowly walk over to him, giving her hips powerful, but sexy attractive sways. Adam couldn't look away. His eyes were glued to her hips.

Boom slowly grabbed the zipper of her sweater and slowly pulled it down. Adam's heart racing faster than before. He thought this was a dream, but it's not. This is real, and this is happening. Boom quickly pulled open her sweater, and her beautiful naked breasts popped out, bouncing a little. There was no bra underneath, only her bare skin showing.

Adam's eyes nearly popped out and he felt his jaw drop a little.

'*Holy hell… she is so damn sexy…'* was what one part of Adam's brain said.

'*Fucking run! RUN! RUUUUUN!'* was what the other part said.

Boom slowly pushed him down and crawled on top of him. Her smirk never left. "You like what you see, big boy?~" She asked in a very sweet voice, and very deeply seductive.

Adam was speechless. His jaw just hanged open. No words can even form to what he was seeing before his eyes.

Boom giggled. "You look so cute, stunned. I guess this means you do like what you see.~"

"Umm. Umm. Umm. Umm…" Adam was panicking. He did not know how to handle this.

"I want to reward you for saving me back at the caves. It was so heroic of you to save me. I just have to reward you.~" She said.

"Uhh, I only did it to protect you, not because I wanted a reward!" Adam blurted out, panicked.

"Oh, you are so sweet. But, I truly want to, Adam. I never felt myself like this. The moment I laid my eyes on you, I knew there was something special about you that I couldn't ignore."

"Which was…?" Adam asked nervously.

"Being with a boy who cares for me." She answered.

"Okay, you're right about that, I do care for you." Adam answered, making her smile. "And I do truly think you're a very beautiful girl, and… I'll admit, I'm down with this idea of yours, but I don't want to impregnate you."

Boom giggled. "Oh, Adam. If that's what you're worried about, then you have nothing to fear."

"What? What are you talking about?" He asked.

"We Mob girls can control our reproductive cycles. We can choose if we want to have children or not. You have nothing to hold back." She assured with a trusting smile.

Adam felt relieved, knowing he won't be a dad anytime soon.

"Are you sure you want to do this, Boomie?" Adam asked.

Boom blushed by her nickname, but she smiled sweetly and leaned close to his face, only for their lips to part by just an inch. "Of course...My Shining Star." She locked her lips with his, in a passionate kiss.

They broke the kiss, and Adam smirked, and quickly turned her around, being on top of her.

"You better get ready then, because I'll make this a night you'll never forget.~" Adam said seductively, and began kissing her neck.

[Lemon warning]

Boom moaned, arching her head back, allowing him to gain more access to her warm, soft neck.

"Oooooh, Adam.~" Boom moaned out as he softly nibbled, licked, and kissed her neck.

"You're so beautiful.~" Adam whispered in a husky voice. His hands softly glided from her cheek, from her neck and then to her breasts. He gently cupped each in his hands and fondled with them slowly.

Boom softly gasped by his warm, soft touches and cooed, while she stroked his jet black hair. Adam rose up and kissed her deeply, while she kissed back. Their mouths opened and their tongues danced together. His fondling grew a bit more rougher and squeezed her breasts, making Boom moan loud in his mouth. She grabbed his head and pushed closer, trying to make their kiss to go deeper.

He then broke the kiss and made his way down to her breasts. He licked, nibbled, and sucked her right breast while his other hand fondled with her left breast.

"Oh, Adam.~ Bite them, suck them, twist them.~ I don't care what you do, just please don't stop.~" Boom moaned, arching her head back, while her body surrendered to the pleasure.

"As you wish.~" Adam said. He then went back to her breasts. Boom was enjoying the attention Adam was doing to her big breasts.

"Hmmmmm.~ You love big breasts, don't you?~" She asked smirking.

Adam could only moan as he swirled his tongue around her nipple, while his hands gave her other a gentle squeeze, making her squeal in pleasure.

Eventually, Adam switched breasts, giving her left one the same treatment.

Boom was in heaven by this handsome boy pleasing her. She then smirked deviously and caught him off guard, rolling him over, making him look at her in surprise. She felt his erection below her thighs, and smirked with lust.

"Do my big breasts really turn you on that much, cutie pie?~" She asked giving her bust a little shake.

"No words in the English language can describe how sexy you are.~" Adam said seductively with his sweet voice.

Boom shuddered by his voice. "Well, then. How about I give your little friend a hand with my girls?~" She crawled down and got to his pants. She grabbed them and tore them off with one go, along with his underwear. His erection stood proud, making Boom blush heavily.

"Oooooh, so big.~" She whispered, looking at his 6.5 inch (16.51cm) manhood. She grabbed her breasts and squished them between his hot rod.

Adam's reaction was immediate, as he let out a gasp, but moaned softly. Her breasts were the most softest pillows he ever felt in his life.

Boom giggled by his reaction, and started to stroke his dick with her bust. His rod throbbed against her breasts, getting harder and harder by the second.

"Mmmmmm.~ Your manhood feels so hot against my breasts.~ It's getting harder every time I stroke it with my tits.~" Boom cooed.

"Keep going.~" Adam moaned out.

Boom smirked and then took the tip of his rod and sucked on it, while her breasts pleased the bottom part of his dick.

Adam gasped by her tongue swirling around his tip. He groaned and gripped the bedsheets, moving his head around by the incredible pleasure of his treatment.

"Ooooh, Boooom.~" Adam moaned out, while he slowly removed his shirt. Boom moved one of her hands down and fondled with his balls, slowly kneading them and squeezing them.

"F...fuck, Boom. I'm gonna….gonna cum if you keep doing that.~" Adam groaned.

Boom let go of his manhood and started to massage it faster and harder with her breasts. "Cum for me, Adam.~ Shoot your cum all over my breasts.~"

After a few more thrusts, he started to feel the pressure building up.

"Ooooooooooh!~" Adam's manhood shot its white seed out and covered Boom's face and breasts. Boom smiled and scooped some of his seed on her finger and swallowed it.

"So good.~" She moaned.

Adam panted and watched her clean herself off. Boom has given him his first ejectulation. It felt amazing. Every lick, swallow and moan, made him hard again.

"How have you been single for 18 years?" Adam said, feeling himself get hard again.

"I wasn't really. I had other Creeper girls please me when I was alone.~" Boom smirked, licking her lips.

"Well, I still got one more thing to do before the big finale.~" Adam said, making Boom smirk and lay down. He removed her pants and underwear, revealing her wet womanhood. He started licking the outside of her puffy lips, while stroking her stomach and right breast.

"Oh my Notch, Adam. This is so good.~" Boom moaned while she placed her hands where his are.

Adam was loving the taste of her juices. She tasted like sweet green apples, but the juices gave a popping tingle feeling in his mouth, like Pop Rocks.

"You taste so good, Boom.~ I feel so intoxicated by your sweet taste.~" Adam said in a husky voice. He pushed her legs open more and passionately kissed her moist pussy. His tongue slithered into her walls and massaged every part his wet muscle can reach. His teeth gently brushing up her clit.

Boom has experienced other girl creepers licking her pussy before, but this felt so different with a boy. His hands endlessly stroked her slim stomach, and her massive breasts, and his warm, thick tongue massaging the insides of her wet walls. She couldn't get enough pleasure from her new lover. She needed more. Oh, so much more.

She panted and moaned slightly. She raised her ass up and grinded herself into his face, getting his tongue to go deeper into her wet pussy.

Adam moaned, while he grabbed her ass and pushed deeper. Boom threw her head back and moaned and screamed with every brush of his tongue swirling inside of her.

"Oh, fuck! Eat me out, Adam! Drink up this slut's cum!~" Boom moaned. Her legs wrapped around his head, her hands grabbing him as well, and pushing him as deep as he could.

Adam was moaning as he continued to eat her out. He slapped her ass hard, making the creeper girl squeal. He felt her pussy lips quivering. Her body was shuddering. She was so close. She needed to cum.

"I'm about to cum, Adam. Drink every bit of my juices.~" Boom purred, continuing to grind against his face.

That was the green-light for Adam to suck on her pussy wildly, and after seconds, she came.

Boom screamed, feeling her body exploding with pleasure. Her cum exploded in his mouth, giving off strong tingles in his mouth. Adam drank her cum, not leaving any drop left.

"Oh, yeah, Adam.~ Drink it all. Taste my cum, my Shining Star.~" She cooed, stroking his hair.

Adam locked eyes with Boom. "You taste so good.~" He said, while he licked the last of her cum off his lips.

Boom smirked. She grabbed him and threw him onto his back. She crawled on top of him and lined her still moist womanhood with his hard dick. "Enough foreplay. It's time for the grand finale.~"

Adam smirked and grabbed her ass. He lined up and slowly pushed his way into her moist hole. The two lovers moaned by the new feeling. Adam sunk deeper and deeper, until he was inside of her fully. He was surprised he didn't feel her hymen.

"Boom, I thought you were a virgin." Adam slightly groaned by her warm walls slowly massaging his shaft.

"I am. I popped my cherry a while back with a dildo.~" She moaned while his cock throbbed in her.

"At least mine's gone." Adam smirked. "You ready for the ride, Boomie? ~"

Boom smirked and grinded slowly against him, letting him moan lightly. "Fuck me as hard as you want, and make me cum than I never had before, cutie.~" She purred.

Adam's smirk widened. "Then get ready.~" He squeezed her ass, and thrusted hard up, slapping his skin against hers.

"Oh, fuck!~ Yes!~ Thrust that dick into me!~ Penetrate my pussy until it's on fire!~" Boom moaned as Adam thrusted hard and deep into her pussy.

"Shit, Boomie. You're so tight!" Adam groaned and thrusted harder into her.

Boom leaned down and kissed him deeply, raiding her tongue in his mouth, as he continued to pound her like his life depended on him.

Adam has never experienced such high level of pleasure before. This was throwing everything out the window. He was actually making love to a girl he actually liked.

"Oh, fuck, Daniel! Fuck me so hard!~" They heard Cupa from the other side of the wall.

Boom looked up from the sound and smirked. *"Okay, sister. Let's have a little competition. Let's see who cums first."*

(meanwhile with Daniel)

Cupa was also thinking of the same thing while she rode my cock. The girls around her were sucking on her breasts and stroking her stomach and rubbing her clit.

"*Wanna dance, sister? Then, let's dance."* She thought smirking. However, she threw her head back and moaned loudly when Skelly pinched her clit gently. Endy grabbed her cheeks and kissed her deeply, with her hot tongue dancing in her mouth.

"Jesus, this is amazing.~" I moaned while I thrusted in and out of Cupa. Gel leaned against me and locked her lips with mine. I kissed her back and rubbed her back. Skelly and Silk fondled with my balls gently, making me moan loud in Gel's mouth.

(Back with Adam)

Adam rolled her over and kneaded the large mounds of her soft, flesh. He pounded hard into her. The tip of his crown hit her G-spot, and pushed in deep, rubbing against it. It was a lot of pleasure that shot down her spine. She threw her head back, and screamed out.

"FUCK! FUCK ME LIKE A WHORE! MAKE ME YOUR BITCH!~" She screamed.

Adam loved her dirty talk and it excited him.

"HOLY SHIT BOOM YOU'RE SO DAMN TIGHT!~" Adam yelled in pleasure.

Soon, Adam felt pressure building up.

"Boom, I gotta let it go!~" Adam grunted. Boom knew what he meant and smiled.

"Let it out sexy.~ I want to feel your hot seed.~" Boom said, surprisingly calmly.

Both Creeper girls were at the bridge of climax as well. Both of the boys pounded them to their max.

Adam roughly squeezed Boom's tits, while Daniel slapped Cupa's ass. It was all too much for them, and they came.

"AAAAAAAAAAAH!" The girls screamed out and the two came at the same time. Their walls clamped down hard against their rods, as they injected a huge load of their hot cum deep into their bowls.

"*Oh, dear Notch. It's so warm.~*" Boom and Cupa thought, by the warmth of the boy's seeds.

After a few more thrusts, they came down and collapsed on their lovers' chests. Boom panted, while Adam gently embraced her.

[Lemon End]

The two laid in the bed, enjoying the afterglow of the best night they ever experienced together.

"That….was….amazing. Best… night… ever." Adam panted softly.

"Hmmm….that was incredible.~" Boom cooed softly, while stroking his chest. "Adam?"

"Yeah?"

"After today, and to now, I know this feeling I have in my heart. I...I love you."

Adam smiled warmly and kissed Boom's head. "I love you too. I had the same feeling when I first saw you too."

"*I guess Daniel was right about us."* He thought.

"I'll be looking forward to doing this again with you, and with more girls.~" Boom smirked with lust.

"As will I.~" Adam said. He kissed Boom's head again. "Good night, my little exploder."

Boom yawned cutely and nuzzled into his chest. "Good night...my Shining Star."

From that, the square moon glittered in the calming night.

Sonic3461: Whew! We are done!

Starshine89: Indeed we are! This was the longest chapter so far. We had lots of fun writing it. Also, I'd like to thank sonic3461 for adding my OC, Adam, into this story. I hope he didn't break the 4th wall too much.

Suddenly, Adam appears next to starshine89.

"I just haven't broken it enough." Adam said, smirking.

Starshine89: GAAAAAAH! ADAM! Can you freaking stop?!

"Hey, you know I can't. You've said it yourself, you think it's funny when I do that. He snickered.

Starshine89: ADAM! THAT CONVERSATION WAS BETWEEN ME, SONIC AND COSMIC! DON'T PEEK INTO IT!

"I'm Deadpool, Pinkie Pie and Sonic in ooooone!" He then ran off.

Starshine89: GET THE HELL BACK HERE!

Starshine runs off after Adam.

Cosmicsafe74: I hope my OCs aren't too…distracting for you guys

Sonc3461: I'm sure our readers will love your OCs, especially to your next one that will appear soon.

Cosmicsafe74: Shhh... they can't know about… *him*.

Adam appears next to Cosmic. "You mean the one wearing a gas mask?" He said, smirking.

Cosmicsafe74: ADAM! When I get my Bolo Mark XXXIII you're done as well as half of this planet!

"Might I add he's humanoid?" he taunted.

Cosmicsafe74: I HAVE 3,200CM HELLBORES POINTED AT YOU RIGHT NOW!

"Oooooh, I wouldn't do that if I were you." Adam said.

Cosmicsafe74: You're right, 5 megatons of plasmas per second is too little for you, let me call in 5 more bolos-

Sonic3461 silences Cosmic and gives a reassuring smile.

Sonic3461: Adam, get outta here, before I ban you from my story.

Adam's eyes widened and he whimpered. "I'll shut up now…." He went back into the screen.

Starshine89: Sigh, thanks sonic.

Sonic3461: Anyway, Starshine and Cosmic's OCs are the only ones I'm adding to my story. No OC requests. I already have more than enough to handle.

Starshine89: That would piss off both Daniel and Adam as well.

Sonic3461: Agreed. Also, we hope you enjoyed this chapter, and we'll be getting to the next one really soon! Stay tuned for the next Chapter of 'Minecrafts Human Spirit!' As Always, like, follow and comment! It will be great support for the story. ^^

All: PEACE OUT EVERYONE!

Cosmic leaves in his black and crimson bolo.

Sonic give a peace sign and blasts off into the sky.

Before Starshine could leave, Adam appears one last time.

"Just know that the odds of me stopping and sonic adding any more OCs to this story, is very high, being an estimated 3720 to 1!" Adam said, nerdily.

Starshine grabs Adam by the shirt and stares him down with fire in his eyes.

Starshine89: Never tell me the odds. Let's leave.

"You're the boss." he says.

Starshine89 sighs and fades away.

Adam winks at the camera one last time. "Adventure!" was the last thing he said before he ran off to a nether portal, which slowly fades away.

8. Chapter 8

Chapter 8: Elemental dragons, Herobrine's first possessions, and a new human

The sun rose over the wonderful world of Minecraft. The villagers were up and about, doing their usual routine. In the Inn, two humans were sleeping peacefully. Well, one was awake.

Adam got up way earlier than Daniel, or any of the mob girls. He quietly got out of the bed, without waking Boom, and got dressed. He looked back at his lover, sleeping peacefully. Adam smiled and quietly planted a small kiss on her cheek.

"Love ya, babe." He whispered.

He went up the roof and sat down, staring at the sunrise. He got out a wireless speaker out of his inventory, paired it with his phone, and started to play music.

(Play Paul Kalkbrenner - Sky and Sand)

Adam placed his gadgets down, got out one of his swords, and got a very hard rock out of his inventory. After that, he started sharpening his sword.

Adam looked at the readers and smiled.

"Morning, guys. Did you sleep well? I certainly did. Now, I probably know what you're thinking? Why does Mr Adam get up very early every day? He has all the time in the world. Well, I like to plan my things out early, and…" he looked at his sword, which showed his reflection. "...sharpen my swords. I like to be prepared."

He looked at the sunrise, and smiled.

"I know these are just words, but trust me, you'd love to be here next to me."

He finished sharpening his first sword, placed it down, and started sharpening the other. Soon, he finished.

Adam placed his blades on his back, put away his things and jumped off the roof of the Inn, and landed on the ground.

"I hope you guys are ready for the chapter, because this is going to be a long one. Cue the intro." he said.

(Play Opening 1- Crossing Field from SAO. English by NateWantsToBattle)

(The music starts up and seven colored stones swirls around the darkness. They collided and the title 'Minecrafts Human Spirit' appears. The screen goes white.)

I always admit the ways of my cowardly past

(The scene changes with Daniel standing on the cliff of Minecraftia, with the wind blowing against his hair and clothing.)

I can't help that

(He hold up his mother's pendant and clutches it tightly.)

And still I always act afraid

(He stares at the sunset and smiles.)

I'm oblivious and now it's back to haunt me

(Gel can be seen smiling at the human.)

Forever

(Daniel looks at his reflection, and sees his mother and grandfather standing next to him.)

Countless skies that I've painted

(Seen, from far, a man looks down at the young human with his smile.)

Surely, this is where my heart

Finally doesn't fall apart

(Seven large objects are seen in the back, and they all opened their eyes, each glowing with power.)

Won't fall apart

(A human was seen. When he opened his eyes, they were glowing white, and smirking evilly.)

Jumping high from my dreams I'll fly

(Daniel is seen in the forest, slashing his sword around against Zombies and other dangerous mobs.)

no matter what the cost

(A large Ender Dragon appears.)

Today I'll find a way to shake off all the pain

(He faces off against it, but then it starts to crush him. Then, the man from before gives Daniel new power and becomes stronger than before.)

Within my dreams I'll touch the sky

(Daniel charges at the ender Dragon, with his sword in hand.)

But I still realize

(He runs on the tail and starts slashing away at the dragon.)

I won't survive the fight

(Gel and some other mob girls were seen, smiling at the camera.)

Without you by my side

(In the shadows, Adam was seen with his two katanas in hand. He looks at the camera slightly, and smiles.)

You give me light when I have lost my way

(Daniel was standing on the cliff, with the seven large objects in the back of him, while the mob girls stood next to him, with smiles on all of their faces.)

I fall asleep 'cause I always find you in my dreams

(Daniel opens his eyes and faces the evil man, while the seven gems swirled around him and he roared, absorbing their power. Aura flows and he charges.)

I'll always be right next to you

(Daniel was lying on a tree, with the girls, who were smiling and lying next to him.)

I'll give you everything I have

(Daniel smiles at the sunrise, and we see the pendant, shining in the sun.)

(Opening ends)

The sun rose over the Inn. I was sleeping peacefully, until the girls gave me another one of their, 'Pleasing' wake up calls. After they pleased me

with their breasts, we all got up and got dressed. We exited our room, and Boom also exited.

"Morning, Boom." I greeted smiling.

"Good Morning, Daniel." She smiled back.

"Is Adam still sleeping?" I asked.

"No. He's not. I think he got up early. And I was hoping to surprise him too." She pouted cutely.

I chuckled. "Well, maybe you can later on."

She smiled a little and nodded. She looked at her sister and the two smirked. They both came together last night, but they won't draw the next time.

We all ate breakfast and collected our belongings. As we exited the Inn, many of the villagers were looking at us, mostly me, with massive blushes.

As we went around a corner, we spotted Adam, sitting on the roof of one of the houses, with wireless headphones on his head. He was bobbing his head, showing that he was listening to music. How much does he like his music?

"Adam!" I called out.

No answer.

"Adam!" I called louder. This one got his attention, and he looked down and smiled. He took off his headphones and put them away.

"Morning everyone!" he said, jumping down.

"Morning to yourself." I smiled. "Sleep well?"

"Eight out of eight, mate." He smiled.

I gave him a knowing smirk. "Enjoy your time with Boom?~" I asked wiggling my eyebrows.

He smirked back. "I could ask you the same thing.~" he said, doing the same.

I laughed. "Got me there. Had a great time. I'm sure you did as well."

"A night to remember." Adam said. He then noticed Boom.

"I… hope I didn't scare you, Boom. I have a tendency to wake up early." Adam said, scratching his hair, while smiling sheepishly.

Boom only smiled. "You didn't." She then smirked with lust. "I guess this means I'll have to wake up earlier to, 'Play' with you.~"

Adam blushed madly. "Oh geez…" he said inaudibly.

I laughed again. "Get used to it, bro. It's about to get more extreme when you have a harem."

Adam's blush increased. "I did not think this through." he whispered.

"So, what are we doing today?" Gel asked me.

"Adventure?" Adam asked.

"Adventure." I answered, smiling.

"Then we better get packing. You guys are already behind." Adam said. Did he pack up early?

"Nope, way ahead of you." I smiled and showed him our inventory.

"I lose." He pouted.

"Hey, this is Minecraft, dude. You always have to be prepared when the sun rises." I pointed out.

"Touché, I always am." he answered.

Soon after, we all left the village. Vanilla waved goodbye to us and we set off.

Through the time of the travel, Adam would secretly pick flowers, and he started to make a bouquet. After he was done, he secretly placed them behind Boom when we stopped.

"Boom, what's that behind you?" Adam asked. She turned around, looked down, and gasped.

It was a bouquet of daffodils, roses, lilacs, and pink tulips.

"Where did this come from?" She asked picking them up.

"Take a wild guess." Adam said, smiling at her. She connected the dots and smiled.

"Adam, you are so sweet." She pulled him into a loving kiss.

Adam kissed her back, while we all smiled at them.

Boom broke the kiss and smiled. "I could have never asked for a better boyfriend."

"Awww… you're just the cutest thing." Adam said with his sweet voice. He's seriously got an awesome voice. He definitely knows his way with the ladies.

ROOOOOOOOOOOOAR!

We all jumped by a very loud, shrilling roar.

"What the fuck was that!?" Adam asked in shock.

"That sounded like…." I started.

The roar got closer and we all saw something huge and long in the air. It had massive wings.

"Is that…" Endy started.

My eyes widened in shock. "That's a Dragon!"

Adam, however, was pissed.

He got out a leaping potion, drank it, and charged at the dragon. He jumped up high, and sliced a bit of its jaw off. How strong is this guy?!

"That's for ruining our moment!" Adam yelled.

The dragon roared in pain by the slash, and it scanned us. It snarled and landed on the ground. We finally got a good view to what it looked like.

The dragon had a long snake like body, but also had legs and arms. Its underbelly was covered in puffy golden hair. The underside of its long body had orange linings and blue crystals. The top of the body had elegant gold hair. The dragon had golden eyes, and had large hair, with orange tips at the end. Its wings were huge. They each had a blue crystal orb at the joints. The under part was covered in the golden hair. Its wings were connected to a ring on its back, with little hair as well.

I was awed by the majesty of this dragon. I never seen one like this before. This was a dragon that was never seen in the game.

"Hi los meyus wah alun iidah zey, mey." It growled in a deep voice.

What!? This dragon knows the Dovah language from Skyrim!? How is that possible. The dragons wound then healed, surprising us all.

"So much for that." Adam grumbled under his breath.

The dragon looked at us all, until its golden eyes locked onto me.

"Zu'u lost finally rund hi, kaal do Mahrk." It spoke.

What? What did it say?

However, it caught us all off guard. The massive Dragon grabbed me in its claws and then flew off.

"HEY, LET ME GO!" I shouted.

"OH NO YOU FUCKING DON'T!" I heard Adam shout. I looked down and saw him dashing towards me. Wow, he's seriously quick on his feet. He jumped up high and slashed its legs, causing the dragon to yell in pain.

The dragon looked at Adam and growled. It turned and shouted, **"Ice Dragon Roar!"** It blew a massive blizzard in his face, freezing him. However, he quickly got free.

"Is that how you're going to do it? Then let's dance, moron." Adam said.

(Insert 'It has Come to This' from Sonic and the Secret Rings)

Adam drank a strength II potion and charged again. He jumped and slashed the dragon, but it dodged. Arrows then were fired. Adam looked down and saw Skelly pulling her arrows out and firing at the beast.

One of the arrows fired and just missed my face.

"Hey, watch where you're firing, Skelly!" I shouted.

"My bad!" Skelly called.

Distracted, Adam jumped in the trees and ran on the dragon's back. The dragon felt him running on its body and snarled.

"**Lightning Dragon Blast!"** Electrical energy blasted around the area, and shocked Adam, paralyzing him.

The beast waved its body around and Adam fell off and landed on the ground.

"Adam!" I called out in concern.

He got up and he looked very weak. He then drank a Healing II potion, and he was good as new.

"I'M NOT DONE WITH YOU YET!" Adam yelled and charged. He jumped up high, and stabbed its eyes.

The dragon roared in pain, and started wiggling to get Adam off. However, he held onto his swords, and he surprisingly seemed to be enjoying it.

"YEEHAW! Is that the best you can do?!" Adam yelled out.

The Dragon was now really angry. It bellowed, **"Mental Dragon Grip!"** Pink energy surrounded Adam. The energy pulled him away and made him hover in the air.

"What the!? I can't move!" He shouted, trying to get out of the energy grip. The dragon however close to his face and snarled.

"**I have no time to deal with you, fool. Be grateful I'm sparing your life, and the fact you're important to the chosen one's destiny."** It growled.

"Chosen one? The fuck are you talking about?" Adam asked.

The dragon snorted. **"In time you will know."** The dragon looked back at me, while I continued to struggle in its grasp. The dragon's eyes glowed brightly and I stopped. I felt...so tired. Then, I passed out.

(Adam POV)

"DANIEL! WHAT THE FUCK DID YOU DO TO HIM?!" I was beyond pissed now. What the hell does this thing want from him?!

"**Calm yourself. I only put him to sleep."** It responded.

"Why?" I asked, starting to calm down. I didn't let my guard down though.

"**He must be asleep because I need to bring him back to my nest. I don't want him to fall from my grip."** The dragon explained.

"So… you don't want to kill him?" I was confused now.

"**That is up for N to decide to do with him. I'm only here to bring him to N."**

N… N, N, N… wait!

"Does N stand for…?" I asked in shock.

However, the dragon didn't let me finish my question. Its eyes glowed brightly again, and I felt myself getting tired as well.

"D….Dan….iel…" I groaned and then passed out as well.

(3rd POV)

The dragon slowly lowered Adam down near the girls. They all gathered around him. They looked at Daniel, who was still out cold, in total concern.

"**Fear not, children. He will not be harmed. I will return with him soon."** The dragon then took off, with the young warrior in its claws.

(Daniel POV)

My head ached a little. The only thing I remember was the dragon's eyes glowing, and then...nothing.

My eyes snapped open and I jolted up. I looked around and I saw myself in a huge cave.

"Where am I?" I asked myself.

"**You're finally awake, Chosen one."** I heard the same voice. I quickly turned and saw the same dragon, but it wasn't alone. There were seven other dragons behind it.

The first Dragon, looked like to be made of fire. The bottom of the Dragon was made entirely out of lava, along with the wings. It had obsidian armor leaking lava and had fire streaks on them. The horns on the dragon glowed brightly with fire and Lava, along with it's spikes all over its body, tail, and claws. It stared down the three with it's red fire eyes. On the top of the beast's head was a large red orb that glowed with massive firepower.

The second Dragon was an Earth one. It stood on all fours, and its body was covered in Earth. Underneath was gray skin. The back of the Dragon had two large stumps with gray skin, indicating them to be the wings. The tail had a massive spiked club, and the two horns on it were sliced off. The stump in the center of the head had a yellow crystal on it, with its yellow eyes shining with the power of Earth.

The Third dragon was a water type. Crystal water wings out feely, letting them shine around them. The dragon had a long neck with spiked spines on the back and all around the dragon, form its legs, back and tail. It had skinny arms, and the head had two horns, with crystal blue eyes. The Dragons final touch had a blue crystal on the chest.

The fourth was pretty amazing. It was all purple, with a green underbelly and the dragon had a skin, frill like head. On the back of the dragon had frills, and the tail had a green fin like end, with a pink crystal orb in the center. Instead of hands and claws like the others, the dragon had one massive claw on the end, connected to massive wings with green skin. Three pink crystal orbs were on the center chest of the dragon. The eyes were pink, glowing with incredible power. On the top was another pink crystal, but this one was glowing and was leaking with power.

The fifth dragon looked very energetic. It was cyan colored, very muscular, and had spine like plates on the top neck, back and upper part of the tail. This dragon had four wings, two on top being the biggest and two smaller ones on the bottom of them. Its cyan eyes crackled with lightning as the cyan crystal on the top of its head glowed with the power of lightning.

The sixth was a wind type. The bottom muscular chest and tip wings were dark gray, while everything else around it was all wind. Mint green wind swirled around the dragon, even the wind covered its face, only leaving the sight of its mouth and green eyes. The top of the head had an open circle, and in the center, was a green crystal.

The seventh and final dragon was very mysterious, but also amazing The dragon had two sides. One being light and the other being darkness. It had spikes on the top of the head, half being light and dark like the rest of the body. The only difference was the wings. The dark part of the dragon had a demonic wing with a spike on it, while the light side had a beautiful feathered wing. The dragon also had two tails in the back. On the top of the head, was a crystal gem, swirling with light and darkness. The dragon's eyes had the colors of black and white, on opposite sides of the dragons colored body. A black eye on the light side, while a white eye on the black part of the dragon.

I was awed by the sight of the dragons before me, but also frightened. I was trapped, outnumbered and clearly outmatched. The large dragon took a step forward, but I skid back and backed up into a wall, shaking like crazy.

"**Calm yourself, child. We have no intention of bringing you harm.**"The snake dragon said in a very calm voice.

The voice calmed me a little, but I was still scared.

"W-w-what do you want from me?" I asked, with my voice shaking.

"I asked Kosei to bring you here." A male voice said.

I jumped from the voice a little, while the dragons back up, allowing a man to walk to me. He was bald man, with a beard and mustache. He wears a brown button shirt, and light gray pants.

At the sight of this man, my eyes widened. "N-no way….y-you're…"

The man nodded. "Yes. I am Notch, the creator of this world." He answered to me.

I was shocked. Somehow, I knew N meant something…

"N...That N person from the letters were…"

Notch nodded. "Yes. It was me. I was the one that brought you here to Minecraftia."

"But….I don't understand. Why….did you bring me here?" I asked.

Notch frowned a little. "I need your help, Daniel. Minecraftia is in danger."

"In danger? To what?" Then the dots connected. "I don't suppose it has something to do with Herobrine?"

Notch was surprised. "So you knew?"

I nodded. "My friend Adam had a theory about that. Speaking of which, I don't mean to sound offensive, but if I'm, 'the chosen one,' then what does that make Adam?"

"Adam is one of the few humans that will help aid you on your journey. The path to defeating my brother won't be easy, so I have chosen two other humans that will aid you." Notch explained.

"What?" My eyes widened. "You mean another human is here?"

Notch nodded. "Yes."

I grabbed my head, trying to process everything at once.

"I know this is all sudden to you, but I can't defeat my brother alone. He has gotten stronger. His power continues to grow everyday. I needed the help of three humans. However, you, are the one that can defeat my brother." Notch explained.

"Why me? Why can't you do it?" I asked.

"Herobrine has gotten stronger, like I said. He has gained new power, one that even surpassed mine. The negative energy of The End, and The Nether World, is on his hands. Not even I can stop him." Notch frowned. "The reason you are the one who can stop my brother, is because you hold an incredible power, one that I have been searching for."

My eyes widened in realization.

Notch saw it and nodded. "Yes. I have given the idea of my world to a human on Earth to create the game, Minecraft. By creating the game, I can see through every person that plays it. I have seen many people play the game, but none had the power I was looking for. However, when I saw you, I felt the energy flow within you. I knew you were the one that can help."

"I couldn't let you handle this alone, so I chose two humans as well to help you in your journey. Adam, and another individual, who you will meet soon."

"What is the power that you speak of?" I asked.

"The power you hold, is a power that holds a chance to stop my brother." Notch held his hand out, and his palm glowed. "The name of the power within yourself, is known as….'Dragon Soul'."

"Dra...gon...Soul…" I muttered.

"This power can allow you to control the powers of a dragon, and wield the elements that make up the world I created." Notch explained.

I looked at the dragons behind him. "Then that means, the dragons are…."

Notch nodded. "Yes. They are the wielders of the elements of Minecraftia. I have brought them here to help you unlock your power. They will be your teachers."

"My….teachers." I said.

"They will join you on your journey and teach you the secrets of the elements they wield. But...this is your decision to make. Daniel, are you willing to fulfill your destiny and defeat my brother, once and for all?"

I looked at my hands and thought over everything. This was crazy. I was brought here to stop Herobrine, the destructor of Minecraft. It scared me, but...I have gained so much then I ever had on Earth. I have friends, a family...and people I love to my heart.

I clenched my fists and looked up with determination burning in my eyes. "I will do everything in my power to stop Herobrine. Even if it kills me."

Notch smiled at my answer, and the dragons growled in happiness by my strong heart.

"Thank you, Daniel. This means so much for me, and everyone that exists in this world."

"I gained so much to protect. I won't have Herobrine destroy what I hold dear to me." I declared.

Notch nodded. He turned to the dragons. "Now will be a good idea to show your true selves."

"True selves?" I asked in confusion.

The eight dragons glowed and they started to shrink. The light faded, and my eyes bulged out.

All eight of them….were females!

The fire girl had long fire red hair. Obsidian armor covered part of her body. Her eyes were dragon red. She wears a red shirt, and red skinny pants. Her breast size were an L-cup.

The earth girl had yellow dragon eyes, yellow hair that stopped to her shoulders. She looked really muscular. She wears a dark yellow sweater, and shorts. Breast size was at K-cup.

The water girl has long flowing blue hair, deeper and bluer than the oceans I've ever seen. She was only wearing a open leggings and was wearing a deep blue bra, barely containing her breasts, which were an I-cup.

The psychic girl has long pink hair that was tied to a ponytail. Her clothing was thin. She was wearing very thin leggings. You can barely make out her panties. Her pink bra was smaller than the water girls, with a breast size at G-cup.

The cyan girl has short hair, but it was pretty spikey. She wears a tight cyan t-shirt, with short blue jeans. Her breast size was at E-cup.

The green girl had grass green hair that fell to her waist, flowing by the wind around her. Her clothing was a green long sleeve shirt. Her breasts were at an F-cup.

The light and dark girl had long hair as well, but her right side was white, and the left was black. She wears a black and white sweater, with combat pants, that were black on one side and white on the other. Her bust was an M-cup.

The final dragon, has golden hair, with orange tips in it. Her clothing was a robe, but it covered her back, while she wore a puffy furred bra. Her smooth creamy legs can be seen. The ring on her back was still there. Her breasts were the biggest out of all of them, at the size of an O-cup

I was blushing so hard, my face was so red. I felt a very hard tightness in my pants, and I can swear I feel a nose bleed.

"You like what you see, cutie?~" The pink girl smirked while she fondled with her bust.

There was one thing I could do with this situation. One that any man could do.

THUD

I passed out.

(Few moments later)

I groaned and I slowly opened my eyes. A few heads were surrounding me. I finally got my view back and saw the girls from before looking down at me.

"Are you okay, child?" A very sweet, angel voice asked me.

"Y...yeah, I'm okay." I rubbed my head. When getting feeling again, I realized my head was lying against something big and very soft. I turned my head a little, and I could make out creamy colored skin. My eyes widened and I looked up, seeing the pink haired girl smiling at me. That's when it hit me.

I was laying on her breasts.

"You like your pillow, sweetheart?~" The girl asked in a very sweet, but deep seductive voice, that just sends massive chills down my spine.

My face exploded red. I yelped loudly, and rocketed myself off of her bust, only to implant my face on another pair of breasts. The black/white haired girl gasped when my face made contact with her bust.

My face went a deeper shade of red. I jolted back, but I hit something soft, again. I looked up and saw that it was a red haired girl's breasts that I landed into. Her cheeks blushing red.

I yelped for a third time, bolted back and was grabbing my head.

"I'm sorry I'm sorry I'm sorry I'm sorry!" I kept blurting out, blushing heavily.

A warm, soft hand grasped my shoulder gently. I looked up at the white robe women. Her face calm, with a very warm, and motherly smile.

"Do not be upset, child. We understand it was only an accident." She said, in a very warm voice.

"Besides, I wouldn't mind him using my breasts as pillows.~" The pink haired girl smirked with lust.

I gulped loudly while my face turned bright red.

"Mentaru, that's enough. You're scaring him." The fire girl said in a stern tone.

"Come on, Kasai. Don't deny it, you enjoy his head on your bust just as much as i do." The girl, now named Mentaru smirked.

Kasai flushed heavily. "S-Stop dragging me into this!" She snapped.

"Now, children, there will be no fighting." The elder women calmed them with her voice and smile.

"Yes, mother." The two nodded.

Amazing. Her warm voice and smile, and that's what it was needed to calm them down.

"Now, Daniel," Notch walked up to me. "I would like to introduce you to the Elemental Dragons." He pointed to the red girl. "This is Kasai,"

"Greetings chosen one." She bowed in respect.

"The strong one is Chikyū," He pointed to the yellow earth girl.

"My earth will crush anyone who stands in my way." She declared.

"This is Mizu," He gestured to the water girl.

"A pleasure to meet you, Daniel." Mizu smiled.

I smiled back, and she smile back at me.

"The pink girl is Mentaru," Notch said to the other girl.

"Hi cutie.~" Mentaru winked seductively at me with bedroom eyes.

"I...um..." was all i could say, while I blushed again.

"What's wrong hottie? Dragon got your tongue?~" She smirked.

"N...no, just...well…" Why is my damn tongue wrapped around with her?

Mentaru giggled. "Aren't you just the cutest thing?"

Notch chuckled. "Now, moving on. This is Raitoningu, but she prefers to be called Rai for short." He pointed to the cyan haired girl.

"Sup?" She smirked with a hand salute.

"The green one is Kaze," Notch gestured to the other girl.

"May my wind guide you, young warrior." She spoke with elegance in her voice.

"This is Meian, the holder of light and Darkness," The white/black haired girl smiled and bowed.

"Greetings to you, young one." She spoke with a wise voice.

"And finally, this is Kosei, the queen of dragons, and the mother of the Elemental Dragons." Kosei smiled warmly.

"It's a pleasure to meet you at last, Daniel Blaze." She greeted with her angel voice.

"It's a pleasure to meet all of you as well." I smiled at the female dragon humans.

"I apologize about what happened from before. I just needed to bring you heer quickly, because Notch wanted to talk to you about this situation." Kosei said.

I smiled and waved my hand. "I understand, Kosei. I know Adam will understand as well." I chuckled, "But he's gonna flip when he finds out he was fighting a gorgeous women like yourself."

Kosei blushed heavily by my words, but she smiled. "You flatter me, Daniel. I'm not as young as I used to be though. If I was a few thousand years younger, then I would be beautiful."

My eyes widened. "You're a thousand years old?"

She nodded. "My children are also a few thousand years old as well."

I looked at the others, who smiled sheepishly. I for one was stunned, and awed. They're this old, and yet they still obtain such youth. It's amazing.

"That's amazing. You are all at this age, and you all are the most beautiful dragon females I ever laid eyes on."

The girls all blushed deeply. Their hearts pounding against their chest, and a wet sensation between her legs was forming.

Kosei was awed that I would say such words to her and her children. It has been thousands of years since her mate has complimented her on her beauty. Her children were also stunned by my words.

Mentaru, was dribbling, her dragon hormones roaring with a lust filled fire. She knew there was something special about me, and lo and behold, she was right.

She smirked, eyes filled with burning lust. She added sexy sways to her hips as she approached me. Quicker than I can react, she wrapped her slim, but beautiful arms around my waist. Her large breasts pressing against my chest.

"W-what are you-" I couldn't finish my question when she slid her long tongue out and licked part of my face, along with my ears. I was surprised she has a tongue that long, but she is a dragon after all. I gasped from the warm, soft tongue gliding around my neck, and my right ear. Not gonna deny it, but I was getting a little turned on by this.

I just hope Adam and the girls aren't freaking out right now.

(Adam POV)

I soon came to my senses and saw the girls looking at me with panicked faces. Once I opened my eyes, I immediately shot my head up.

"What happened?! Where's Daniel?!" I asked looking around, panicking a little. Sad fact: I'm prone to panicking.

"That….dragon took him. We don't even know where it went with him." Gel answered, trying so hard not to cry.

"Shit." I shot myself up. "Did any of you see where that dragon went?"

Gel pointed at the taiga biome in front of us. "They went that way. That's all we know."

I smirked with confidence. "That's all we gotta know. Let's go find him."

After that, we set out to find Daniel. I just hope he's okay.

We wandered the biome for about 30 minutes, when we saw a cave, which appeared to be glowing.

"This is new." I said. Maybe this is the cave that Daniel might be in. "Let's move."

The girls nodded and we pressed into the unknown.

(Daniel POV)

Kosei managed to get Mentaru off of me, much to my relief. Damn, that Dragoness is one horny girl.

"So anyway, about Dragon Soul, how do I unlock it?" I asked.

"It's simple. These eight will be your teachers and they will train you to master your powers. It is sealed within you, but by them giving part of their soul to you, you will unlock part of your power, but you must train hard to unlock more of it's secrets." Notch explained.

"I see." I nodded.

Suddenly, Rai looked at the entrance of the caves and then shifted into her dragon form.

"Sweetie, what is it?" Kosei asked her lightning daughter.

"We have company." he replied, with her voice more deeper than before. I guess their voices changes when they're in dragon form.

The others quickly transformed back in their dragon forms and stood ready. Notch moved back to prevent being spotted, while I stood behind the dragons.

"Daniel!" I heard a voice call from far away. That sounded like…

"Adam?" I quietly spoke. I moved forward and looked ahead. Holy shit, it was him, along with the girls.

"Adam! Everyone!" I shouted and ran to them.

Adam looked in my direction and smiled brightly.

Unfortunately his face hardened with anger, and I saw him dashing right past me, and I knew what was about to happen.

"Adam, stop! They won't hurt us!" I shouted

But my words fell on deaf ears, as I saw him jumping up and taking out his swords.

"Let… my friend… **GO!**" he said, almost sounding… demonic.

Kosei looked at the boy, and growled. **"How did you find this place!? This is sacred to few who know these caves!?"**

"**I have my ways, you damn lizard!"** Adam growled. **"Now, it's payback time!"** He lunged forward with his blades ready to strike.

"Adam, stop!" I shouted again, but fell on deaf ears. He roared and slashed Kosei in the neck, making her screech and roar in pain.

Chikyū got angry and bashed Adam with her massive club tail, making him crash into a wall.

"ADAM!" I screamed.

"**How dare you harm the Ruler of Dragons, you scum!"** She bellowed angrily.

Suddenly, Adam's eyes opened. But instead of seeing his hazel eyes, I was greeted with a terrifying scene.

His eyes were glowing white.

"**You should have never laid a damn claw on Daniel. Now I will take your meaningless lives, you overgrown lizards!"** Adam said, his voice dark and demonic.

I glanced at the girls, who were terrified, especially Boom, who was in tears. I felt bad for her.

"Adam….what is happening to you?" I whispered in fear while looking at my friend.

Suddenly, his swords turned demonic red, and they grew until they were 10 inches (25.4cm) long, curved and so sharp, they could cut through stone. The blades were scaring me. This wasn't Adam. Something was wrong with him. Something bad, and dangerous.

Adam let out a very long and loud battle cry, making me hold my ears in pain. He blasted forward and slashed Kosei again, and her wound was more deeper than before. The slice was so strong, it even blasted her off of her legs and blast into a wall.

"KOSEI!" Her children cried.

Adam's eyes then changed to something even more terrifying. Now, instead of glowing white, his eyes turned black, and inside were two crimson dots, and blood was leaking from his eyes.

This was terrifying me so much. I never seen anything like this.

Adam's mouth slowly formed into a demonic and creepy smile, whilst his head twitched violently.

Notch, who was watching the whole thing, was shocked by this boy's raw and demonic power.

"*How did he require this power? And...why does it…."* His eyes snapped wide open. *"Oh no….brother, what have you done?"*

Adam slowly walked forward with his blades in hand. He started to gain speed, until he went into a full sprint. He blasted to Kasai, and stabbed his blades deep in her chest, literally going through her.

She cried out in pain, she tried to slash him, but he was too fast.

"Stop…." I whispered. This was so much I couldn't handle.

Adam blasted forward to Rai, and slashed her lower left wing. She screeched in pain as it bleeded.

"Stop…" I said louder as I started to walk forward.

Adam laughed like a madman and blasted to Mizu. He sliced her left eye, causing blood to seep out. She let off a cry of pain. Adam smirked and charged at her.

"STOP IIIIIIIIIIT!" I screamed and ran at a full sprint.

Adam laughed and drew his blades up. I grabbed my blade and unsheathed it. I finally got there in time and our blades clashed. The crystal part of my blade glowed brightly, as the blades grinded against each other.

"**I see you finally decided to make a move, Daniel."** Adam said, his voice more demonic than ever.

This wasn't Adam at all. Someone….or something, was controlling him.

"Who are you!?" I demanded, gritting my teeth. "What have you done with my friend!?"

"**It's really simple actually. Ever since Kosei took you, I felt the anger within him, and I used it to take control of him. Now that his anger built up, I could finally fully control him and make him my puppet."** He explained.

My own anger started building. How dare this son of a bitch, control my friend! I will make him pay.

"I'LL RIP YOU APART!" I roared and pushed him back.

The possessed being laughed evilly. **"Let's see if you can!"**

"I won't let you!" A voice called out.

Adam turned and Notch charged in with his hand glowing white.

"**WHAT!? YOU!?"** Notch pushed his palm in Adam's chest and his body was glowing brightly. The person controlling Adam screamed in pain, twistedly.

Then, two things happened at once. A black piece of ender dust came out.

"**This is not over, brother. I will have my revenge."** It said to Notch in a demonic voice. Then it flew away.

At the same time, Adam was pushed back with great force, sending him through five cobblestone walls before getting launched back into a taiga biome.

"ADAM!" Me and the girls yelled at once. We ran over to him, and we found him lying on the ground, not moving.

Notch, and the Dragons came up as well, seeing my friend knocked out cold.

"Notch, is he gonna be alright?" I asked in concern. While the girls were shocked to see the creator of Minecraftia, they too were also concerned for his safety and health.

"He'll be okay. His body just used up a lot of energy when he was possessed." Notch answered.

"Possessed?"

"It seems my brother was using your friend as a puppet to try to kill you." He explained.

"Herobrine." I growled in anger.

"Exactly." Notch said.

"If I ever come across that thing, I'll fucking tear him apart!" I growled.

"Calm yourself Daniel. In time, you will vanquish him forever." Notch said calmly.

I sighed, knowing he was right. If I battle him now, I'll just end up getting killed. I have to focus on training to unlock more of my power.

Adam groaned and slowly opened his eyes. They were back to their original hazelnut color.

Then he shot his eyes up and looked around and saw me.

"Daniel, what happened? Where am I?" He asked quickly, hyperventilating.

"Calm down, bro. You're fine. We're still at the taiga biome. You're safe now." I answered while placing a hand on his shoulder.

He calmed down, but once he noticed the dragons, he went wide-eyed.

"Are… are you guys the Elemental Dragons?" He asked.

"**That's right, child. We are."** Kosei answered with a nod.

Then, Adam started shaking, and his lips were trembling. I also saw tears building up in his eyes.

"I'm sorry… I'm so sorry… I… I didn't want to hurt you guys…" He quietly said, quietly sobbing as well.

"What's wrong, Adam?" My eyes widened. "Wait, you knew about what happened back at the caves?"

He nodded. "All I remember was turning very angry, and passing out, only seeing through that demon's eyes. It was a dark voice in my head, telling me to… kill the dragons. I didn't want that, but my body had a mind of its own. Then I found out I was being controlled." He looked at the dragons. "I am so sorry I tried to kill you guys. If you want to end my life here, then do it. I can't live like this, knowing there's a demon controlling me. Just take my worthless life!" He then fell to the ground and started bawling.

Me, the girls and the others were shocked by his words. God, he must be taking this hard.

Kosei frowned by his words. She knew he never meant to harm her. He was only trying to protect me. Her massive head lowered to the young man. Adam looked up and saw her close. He shut his eyes tightly, waiting for his life to end here.

However… he felt a warm tail wrapping around him. He slowly opened his eyes, which were bloodshot red, and looked up at the majestic dragon. She nuzzled him like he was her child, catching him by shock.

"Why am I not dead yet?" He asked, with a shaky voice.

"**Child, don't ever say such words. It wasn't your fault that you were possessed. I know you were only trying to protect Daniel. All is forgiven."** She replied, in a soothing voice.

Adam didn't feel happier though. "You might forgive me, but I can never forgive myself for this. Hell, nobody else in this world would. I mean, why? I'm nothing but a living demon." He said, starting to bawl again.

I walked up to him, and kneeled to his height. "Adam, I know this is hard for you. But you have to understand. What happened wasn't your fault. You're not a demon. It was Herobrine to be blamed for this. He was using you to get close to me and try to kill me."

Adam looked away, and started bawling into the dragon's fur. I heard the words "I'm sorry" over and over again. Damn, he's taking this hard. Poor guy.

Kosei nuzzled him gently. Her warm scales wrapping around him a little more tighter. **"Shh...it's okay child. It's alright...shh."**

After a good five minutes, he looked to the ground, still breathing heavily.

He looked up to the dragon and smiled.

"Thank you… I can't believe you're forgiving me for almost killing you and your children."

Kosei smiled warmly. **"Forgiveness is what leads to healing a broken heart, child. I can never hold my anger against you, neither will my children."**

"Well, that's good to know." He said, sniffing.

"You see man? They can never be angry at you for something you didn't do. Herobrine is to be blamed." I stated.

"True, true." He said, chuckling.

I looked back at the dragons. "I guess now you all should reveal your true selves."

"True selves?" Adam asked in confusion.

They all nodded and shined, shrinking a little and their bodies morphing. The lights died down and they appeared in their female human forms.

"Holy shit." Adam said as he saw how they look like now. Adam's face fell to a depth of shock and disbelief, not knowing he was fighting girls this whole time.

"You guys are *girls*? Oh dear god, I am so sorry." He said.

They all giggled. "Don't be, young one. All is okay." Kosei said, with her angel voice back.

Adam felt a blush form by her voice. Can't blame him. Her voice is gorgeous, and so soothing.

"Now then, I think we should focus at the matter at hand." I said, making the others nod. "Notch explained you will be my teachers, and said you will help me unlock my power. How will that work?"

The eight dragons held their hands out and orbs of energy formed, each one glowing brightly in front of me.

"We will transfer part of our own souls to you, to help awaken your power." The elder dragon explained. Each of the orbs hovered and slowly entered my body. I felt amazing energy surge in my soul, blood and heart. It felt….amazing.

My eyes turned dragon, with different flowing aura in it. I felt my body growing with the muscles growing as well, making me look more muscular than ever. Even the streaks in my hair flowed with different colors. I felt more stronger than ever before.

"Wow….this feels….incredible." I breathed in awe.

"We have given you the knowledge of our elements. I have also given you the gift of the dragon. You now can control Dragon Chi." Kosei explained.

"So, you will first teach me how to control my dragon Chi, in order to control the other Chi I hold?" I asked.

"That is correct." She nodded. Kosei turned to Adam. "Since you will also be here to guide and assist Daniel, we too will aid you, by giving our power to you as well."

"Really?" Adam asked surprised.

"Of course. Be reminded, that not all of our Elements will respond to you, since you don't hold Dragon Soul, but you should be able to make contact with some." The held their hands out again like before. Most of them were not glowing brightly like before, but Mentaru, Kaze and Rai's orbs were glowing brightly.

"So you will posses, Wind, Lightning and Mental. They seem to fit you well, child." Kosei smiled. The orbs floated and entered his body. Like me, his body changed a little, and his eyes were like dragons as well, but flowed with the colored auras, pink, cyan and green.

Adam was also amazed by the power surging in his body.

Then the girls walked up to us.

"Wow. They look more muscular than before." Endy blushed by my new developed body.

Skelly smirked and licked her lips. "Me likey.~" She purred and held my arm, making it sink in her cleavage.

"I wonder how well you will be in bed this time, with this sexy new body?~" Cupa purred with seduction while tracing a finger around my chest, causing me to blush heavily.

Boom purred with delight by Adams new developed body. She was getting horny by his new ripped chest and arms.

"You and I are gonna have a lot of fun tonight.~" Boom cooed with lust in her voice.

Adam blushed heavily. *"What else could happen? A few girls coming out of nowhere?"*

At that, three small colored orbs came out of Adam's body and they glowed brightly. Adam looked closer and his jaw dropped.

Three female girls were in front of him.

'*Me and my big mouth.'* He thought, gulping.

"If I were to make a wild guess, you three are in love with me?" He asked them.

"Yes, master!" The three replied with smiles.

'*What the fuck?! Did they just call me master!?'* He thought out of shock.

The first girl on the left was a short cyan haired girl. She had dark blue skin, sapphire blue eyes, wore a blue T-shirt, had light blue shorts, and had E-cup sized breasts.

The second girl in the middle was green haired, that fell to her shoulders. She had jungle green skin, wore a green tank top, had forest green jeans, and had D-cup sized breasts.

The third girl on the right had long purple hair that fell to her waist. She had light pink skin, wore a purple vest, had purple shorts on, and G-cup sized breasts.

The sight of these three girls, I knew they were now part of Adams Harem. I chuckled. *"You're gonna be VERY busy tonight, bro."*

The three girls tackled him to the ground. Their busts were pressing against his face and chest. Adam's face was deep red, a tightness in his pants growing.

Boom was smirking, seeing three sexy females now part of his Harem. *"You have made my life more exciting, Adam. I can't wait to get into that gang bang with these sexy bitches."* She thought with a fuck fest playing in her mind.

"Um, how did this happen?" I asked, gesturing to the females on Adam.

"Being one with him, Adam held the power to create his own Dragons. Those three are his elemental dragons as well." Kosei explained.

"So….does this mean I can…." I stopped and my eyes widened a little and my cheeks turned deep red.

The dragons giggled. "Correct. You have your own Dragons as well." The elder answered for me.

I coughed, while my harem girls were giggling, and some had very interesting looks in their eyes about this new info.

"Now then, how about we get going? I'm sure there's more to see." I suggested.

We all nodded and we headed north. While we all walked, Adam's girls were around him, either snuggling, or softly stroking his chest or arms, much to his embarrassment and Boom's delight. Soon after, we all entered the snow lands. It looked pretty snowy, wince there was snow everywhere.

"We must be in the snow area." I said while pulling out my map.

"There are some caves we can visit when we settle for the night." Kasai said, combing her red fire hair.

"Great thinking, Kasai." I smiled at the fire girl, making her blush by my smile.

As we headed deeper into the snowy forest, we all heard the sound of a baby pup bark. We all turned to our rights to see a baby wolf pup, a few feet from us.

"Oh, it's so cute!" Mentaru squealed.

Behind the trees, another wolf came out. Glittering blue eyes locked onto mine. At that, I knew that wolf.

"Oh, it's you." I said.

The wolf barked at me, while the pup yipped.

"You know that wolf, Daniel?" Adam asked.

"Yeah. I met it awhile back when I first came to this world." I explained.

The wolf and pup walked up to us and I kneeled. I rose my hand up, and placed it on its head, making the wolf growl in pleasure.

"Good to see you." I smiled.

The wolf licked my face, making me chuckle. I then turned my attention to the pup next to it.

"Hey there little guy." I petted the little ones head. The pup yipped and licked my hand. I smiled. I gently picked the young one up and it snuggled in my arms, making the girls 'awwed' at the sight.

"Wow, dude. I never knew you were good with wolves." Adam smiled.

"Well, I grew up with dogs and wolves. They're basically my most favorite animals." I stated, while I scratched the young ones ears, much to its delight.

"Awesome. I really like dogs too, next to cats." Adam said, stroking the pup's head.

Then a bolt of crimson lightning hit me out of nowhere making me scream in pain.

"Daniel!" Adam shouted.

I grunted in pain by the blast. The pup wasn't hurt, which I was grateful. The wolf turned and snarled dangerously, baring its teeth in a threatening manner.

"Okay, who the fuck did that!?" Adam shouted while readying his blades, which were back to normal, but still slightly curved.

As a body appeared from out a tree it looked very WW1/WW2 like as it had a long black trench coat and a gas mask with glowing crimson eyes and it look like it had a m35 helmet on its head. It gas mask had a skull printed on it, that was covering its face. Pipes were connected to the wears black boots, and thick black gloves with a weird looking backpack. It has black armor over a trench coat and over its black Trousers. On it's back was what looked like Tesla coils coming out the top size of its back with crimson electricity going in between them as this thing held the tesla gun buttstock on it's left shoulder with it. Its left hand on the trigger. Just by looking at us, and by its body language it look pissed. It looked like it was 6 feet tall (182.88 cm).

"Who are you, and why the fuck did you blast Daniel!?" Adam shouted in anger, while the others looked pissed off as well.

It then put the tesla weapon away and pull out a Msb rifle (Polish rifle this one is bullpup) with a bayonet on the end of it. It look like it was 16 inches (40.64cm) long sword with a large box mag where the mag should be and it pointed the gun at me.

"Is this thing insane!?" I shouted.

The creature fired the weapon, but Adam thought quickly, and swerved in front of me and cut the whole bullet in half with his blades.

It then fired more and more, but Adam cut down all the bullets. It then pulled out a machine gun which look like an MG42.

"Bring it, moron." Adam said with confidence.

It then fired very quickly, but Adam spun his blades over and over and over, cutting down all the bullets, not missing even one. Was this the effect of the lightning element? Wind? Or Mental?

'*Thank you Rai.'* Adam thought smirking.

The creature ran out of bullets and then pulled out a tube of some kind a and throw it at us. Right before Adam could it hit it. The tube exploded in front of all of us. Our ears went ringing and all we could see is white.

"AH! That was a flash bang!" I shouted, but didn't hear myself.

When the smoke cleared, the thing disappeared. along with the wolf and pup.

"Hey, where did it go!?" I growled.

Kaze grew her wings and flew up. She closed her eyes and listened in the wind. SHe picked up a scent and a different change in the wind.

"It went that way, along with the wolf and pup!" She called out pointing in the direction.

"Let's go!" I called and we all ran to the direction, Adam being faster than ever.

'*Thank you, Kaze.'* Adam thought.

We all ran. I felt a pulse of energy, and I felt myself running faster. Then I heard screaming and saw something I didn't want to see. A small tesla coil out of the ground shock everyone.

"Why that…!" I growled in anger. Who was this bastard!?

"Daniel, over there!" Adam pointed ahead. I looked and saw the creature running, with the pup in his arms. The wolf was running at him, barking angrily, teeth baring, and the pup was struggling and biting to escape its grip.

Suddenly, Adam's eyes turned pink and he dashed forward and the creature was covered in a pink aura, being lifted into the air, causing him to drop the pup. I quickly ran and caught the pup in my arms before it could hit the ground.

'*Thank you, Mentaru.'* Adam thought.

The thing struggled in the aura. Adam descended it down near the ground, while the wolf barked angrily at it.

I gently placed the pup down and walked over to the creature. My fist was glowing gold, and I was so angry at this thing.

"Very low to steal a pup from one of its pack member." I growled. "Now...you're gonna FUCKING PAY YOU DICK!" I roared and punched it's hard in the face, knocking it out. My punch caused to crack its gas mask a little.

Adam released it and it fell to the ground. The wolf snarled and growled at it, waiting for it to wake up. It look like it has something in its left hand. I looked and was thinking, *not again.* Then, I heard a hissing sound and our bodies gave out.

"What….the fuck…..is this?" I weakly asked.

Then, we all passed out. Or so I thought.

Adam was able to retrieve to a safe distance to avoid passing out. As Adam saw this thing grab the wolf and the pup but what Adam didn't expect it was very careful on how it treated them. Then ran off deeper into the snow biome.

"The fuck?" Adam questioned. Who was this creature? However, that wasn't important right now. He ran back to Daniel, and took out a healing potion. He made the warrior gulp it down, and he started to wake up.

"Oooooow. Felt like someone was bashing my head with a hammer." I moaned in pain.

"Are you okay, Daniel?" Adam asked in concern.

"I'll live." I responded, as he helped me up. I looked around and saw the creature and the wolves gone. "Where the fuck did that thing go!? Where are the wolves!?" I asked.

"It got away. For some strange reason, it didn't look dangerous." He responded.

"What the fuck is that supposed to mean?" I asked in anger and confusion.

(Meanwhile with the pup and wolf)

The pup started to wake up and was angry at this thing. She jumped up and snarled.

"Shh...it's okay. I'm not gonna hurt you." It calmly said, reaching out to it. It's voice was a little cracky, deep and sounded like it was talking through an old radio.

The pup didn't trust it at all and yipped sharply and tried to bite its fingers but instead of flesh or whatever this thing is made of, it bit metal.

"You don't need to be afraid. I was only trying to save you." It said again, voice still calm.

Save? What does it mean by that? She didn't need any saving. She was fine when this thing showed up and took her from the others.

The elder wolf finally got up and saw the creature near her young. She snarled angrily and barked viciously at it. She ran up and got between it and her pup. She bared her teeth at it, showing she was going to rip it apart if it makes any move to hurt her pup.

Then a few wolves from her pack come out. They all bared their teeth at the newcomer. It looked around, seeing it was surrounded.

"*Aw, give me a break. This is the thanks I get for saving the pup?"* It thought annoyed.

Then one wolf jump at it but the thing dodged it.

"Look, I don't want to fight any of you. I'm not your enemy." It said, hoping to avoid the situation.

The wolves didn't listen and another lunged at it. Another did as well. The thing avoided the first one, but the wolf bit down on its leg. But, with the boots it was wearing, it didn't feel a lot of pain, but it still stung a little.

"Enough!" A voice called out.

The wolves calmed a little, and they all stepped back. The thing was relieved they stopped fighting it, but something still felt off. It heard footsteps from in front of it. Out of the snowy trees, came out three women, but they were unusual. Each of them were some sort of wolf girl.

One was 7'6" (228.6 cm) with 9 tails and with P-cup breasts. Her clothing had snow white fur all over her creamy skinned body. Her eyes were

snow white and had a pair of wolf ears, just like the other two. Her body was an Hourglass curved, with very smooth, but sexy legs. Her hips were very sexy as well.

The second was wearing Gray fur. She too has the curvy hourglass figure with amazing legs, along with amazing hips. She was 7'3" (221 cm), has 9 tails as well, gray eyes, with Q-cup breasts.

The third girl was wearing black fur on her body. She was at 7'5" (226.1 cm). Hourglass curved body, amazing legs as well, added with amazing, sexy hips. Her eyes were Dark gray, has 9 tails like the other two and has O-cup breasts.

The three moved a little closer to the newcomer, and the white one spoke.

"Who are you, outsider?" She asked in an elegant, but demanding voice.

However, it couldn't get the chance to answer when the pup walked up to her and yipped. The elder white wolf women picked up the pup and she listened to the pups story.

As the young one finished, her eyes widened. She turned to the thing and her eyes narrowed dangerously. "You were taking this pup away from a group and her mother?"

The wolves understood her and they all snarled viciously at the creature again. They didn't appreciate anything or anyone stealing pups from their pack. She then stepped forward as the thing step back surprised by this woman's rage.

"Wait! This is all a misunderstanding. I wasn't taking the pup from her pack. I was only trying to save her." It responded. The girls were surprised by this things voice. It kinda scared them a little, but they stood their ground.

She stopped and look at the creature in confusion. "What? Saving her from what?"

"She was being held by two things. They were hurting her." It explained.

Her eyes widened by its explanation, but the pup quickly yipped about what happened. Her eyes returned to a narrow and dangerous glare.

"The pup said you're lying. The two things that were holding her were not hurting her at all. They were only petting and holding her." She explained.

"I'll leave now and I will not bother you anymore." It said as it turned and started to walk away.

The black one snapped her fingers and the wolves stopped it in its tracks.

"Not so fast. There's something else you're not telling us." She said in a stern voice.

"*Dear God, I don't want this woman to be mad."* it thought.

The mother wolf walked up to them and barked. The white woman's eyes widened.

"What? He attacked the one you met from before back at the plains?" she asked in shock.

The wolf barked.

She looked at the thing again, and her face turned into an enraged scowl.

It then pulled out it sword but instead of pointing it at them, it put it on it own neck.

"What are you doing!?" The gray women asked in shock.

"If you want me dead let me kill myself. I don't know where I am and I can't find a way to get back to the only person that make me feel….normal." It said in a sad voice.

The white female wolf lost her scowl and looked at the thing in confusion and slight sadness.

"Put the blade away. We have no intention on killing you." She said, her voice now calmer, and more gentle.

"You're lying. Everyone that I talk to lies to me and call me a freak. Why should i trust you miss?" It asked, as its voice cracked a little.

Before she could answer, the pup in her arms jumped off and slowly approached the creature.

It looked down at it, and she sniffed his legs. She looked up at his covered eyes and whimpered. She nuzzled her face against his leg.

"*Not the dog trick. What is this? An anime or something?*" It thought.

"My young one seems to trust you. If any of my pack members trusts you, then I will as well, along with my sisters." The white wolf said.

"Why?" It asked, voice cracking more.

The gray wolf slowly approached the creature, It froze, and was slightly shaking a little. She saw the mask could be removed. Slowly, she reached up and grabbed it.

"Don't. It would be better if you don't." It said.

She looked at it, her eyes deep with warmth and trust. "It's okay. Please...you can trust us." She spoke in a very calm, motherly voice.

"I… just don't like to show what's under this… people said it's ugly." It explained.

"You don't need to be afraid. We will never think of hurting you, or seeing you as a freak, or monster. We've seen many things through our time, and we never see anything ugly."

"*They're not going to stop are they?"* It thought

"You have 5 seconds. After that I'm not taking this off again miss." It said.

She smiled warmly and slowly took the mask off. The cool breeze of the wind hit its face. When the mask was off fully, her eyes widened and a blush formed on her cheeks. It...he is VERY pale and is VERY good looking from what she thought. She saw his eyes they are the most beautiful blue eyes she has ever seen and he had glasses that look like they had square glass so he could see and his hair look light blonde it was short from what she could see. It was also spiky. His right cheek was slightly purple, from the punch Daniel gave him from before.

"Now you see why people see me as a freak?" He questioned. His voice was soft also quiet.

"You're...so handsome." She answered softly.

His eyes widened slightly by her answer. "W….what? What did you say?" He asked above a whisper.

"I said you're handsome. How can anyone ever say such a thing about you? You're not ugly at all. You look amazing." She explained.

"...I don't know what to say. That's the first time anyone has ever said something so nice to me." He whispered.

The girl felt heartbroken. Who in their mind would say some things so horrible to him. She wrapped her arms gently around him, along her tails. He gasped lightly by the contact.

"You are far from ugly, young one. I don't know much about you….but you don't have to be alone anymore. You don't have to live with so much pain and sadness. I promise….you will never be hurt ever again." She soothed in the most motherly voice he ever heard.

What she didn't expect was that he go on his hands and knees and started to cry. The wolf girl felt tears of her own forming, seeing how hurt and sad this boy was. She kneeled and hugged him again. Her tails softly stroking him gently.

"Shh...It's okay. Let it all out, child...shh…." She shushed gently while stroking his back and helmet. (his tesla backpack is off so it won't shock her)

"I...I...d...don..don't know w...what t..to s..say…" He choked on a quiet sob.

"It's alright. I promise, you will never be alone, or hurt ever again." She soothed.

His arms slowly rose up and softly hugged her back. "Thank you….thank you…." He whispered, burying his face into her shoulder.

She smiled warmly and nuzzled in his neck. "Anytime, young one."

The two sisters smiled warmly by this touching moment. The wolves around them were no longer angry at him. They all felt bad for him now, and they all felt happy for the young sister to comfort him.

They finally broke the hug a few minutes later. He had a true, small smile on his face.

"What's your name, young one?" She asked gently.

"I..if I tell you can you not tell anyone?" He asked.

"Why?" She asked a little confused.

"Whenever I tell someone my name they tell their friends and then they beat me up." He explained sadly.

The three sisters gasped.

"Oh, you poor thing." The gray furred girl said in sadness. "We would never beat you up, if you tell us your name. We would never harm anyone like you."

The other two smiled and nodded in agreement.

"It's….Ian….with an 'e' sound." The boy, now named Ian said quietly. He then waited for them to say something mean.

"Ian…" The girl smiled. "That's a very nice name."

Ian's eyes widened and looked at her. "R….really?"

She nodded with her warm smile. "Ian is such an amazing name. It fits you perfectly." She answered truthfully. Then Ian put his gasmask back on.

Suddenly, they heard on oncoming scream. Ian looked to his left, and he saw the black and white haired boy from before, running full speed at him, looking pissed.

Before Ian could react, he was tackled to the ground with great force, being held down and was met with a very angry face.

"**Who are you and why did the fuck you take that pup?!"** He asked, his voice deep and demonic.

"Adam! Stop jumping into things before you think it through!" Daniel shouted as he came out of the area.

"**I do not believe Adam is in control."** Kosei said.

"**How'd ya know?"** His eyes were black and bleeding again.

"Shit." Daniel grumbled and ran forward. He tackled Adam and pinned him down. "Adam! You need to wake up! Herobrine is trying to control you again!"

"**Stop trying these chichés, Daniel. Adam is not in control, and my pathetic brother will not stop me this time!"** Adam/Herobrine growled.

Then Ian grabbed his tesla gun and put the power to 1 percent (when he shot Daniel it was at 0.01 percent). He pointed at Adam and fired, making the possessed boy scream in pain.

"**AAAAAH! YOU PATHETIC HUMAN!"** Herobrine/Adam screamed. Even when under control, Herobrine is weak against basic attacks when he's controlling a body. He growled in pain and frustration and left Adam's body.

"**This isn't over, humans!"** Herobrine shouted and flew off in the snowy skies.

Daniel sighed in relief, happy that Herobrine was gone. He turned his attention to Ian, with a grateful smile.

"Thank you. I owe you one." Daniel thanked.

Daniel then saw that this gasmask figure was still pointing his tesla gun at them.

He knew he might be scared or upset after what happened from before. He sighed. "Listen, about what happened from before. I'm sorry."

Ian looked a tiny bit surprised, but kept his guard up.

"Liar." Ian responded.

It's voice scared the girls and Daniel was creeped out by the voice.

Suddenly, Adam woke up and panicked again.

"AAH! What happened?! Where am I?! Was I-OOF!" He didn't get to finish his sentence because he ran into a tree from the hyperventilating.

"Dude, relax. You're okay. Well, you got angry again, and….well….Herobrine brain washed you again." He explained.

"Why me?" He asked, looking sad again.

"I think he must have done something to you when you met him the second time. Normally he would just kill players when he meets them, but he left you alive." Daniel stated.

Adam's eyes widened. "So that's why he spared me…"

"Damn...this has turned out to be one hell of a stressful day." Daniel sighed and rubbed his head.

"Would someone please explain to me what is going on?" The thing asked.

Adam was creeped by this thing voice.

The two boys looked back at the gas mask wearing guy. They also saw the wolves, and the three sisters.

Daniel sighed. "Guess we better start explaining."

(A few moments later…)

Daniel and the others have explained over the course of what happened. The dragons, Notch, Herobrine, the battle, Ian and now.

The wolf sisters felt shivers down their spine when they mentioned Herobrine. From now, everything made sense.

"Well, at least the situation is cleared up now." Adam said.

"Not yet." Daniel said.

"Huh?"

Daniel turned his attention to Ian. He pulled out his sword, startling him, but he relaxed a little when he threw his blade down.

"I know you believe I would hurt you after what happened when we encountered each other. I hurt you, and you have every right to be angry or scared of me. When you attacked me, I thought you wanted to kill me. However, when you saved Adam, I knew there was something different about you. And the wolves don't see you as an enemy. I know I made a mistake hurting you, and I probably don't deserve your forgiveness, but I still want to let you know how sorry I am. I would even give my life to show how sorry I really am to you, for hurting you and putting you on the spot like that." Daniel said to the young man behind the mask.

" The second to last person that acted like you put me in the hospital with almost every bone in my body broken for eight months." Ian said.

Daniel was shocked, even the others. *"Holy shit."* He knew now he did make a big mistake, hurting Ian. His teeth clenched. He looked at his blade and sighed sadly. He picked it up and hovered it above his arm.

"Bro, what are you doing?" Adam asked.

"Paying for my sins." He sadly answered. He slashed his arm, leaving a good opening in his arm, making him hiss loudly.

Everyone was shocked, especially Ian and Adam.

Adam ran over to him, grabbing the blade, but Daniel had a tight grip, and didn't let go. It took Adam time to pull it out, and once he did, he stabbed it in the ground, and slapped Daniel. *Hard.*

"Stop that!" Adam shouted.

"No I won't! I hurt him, and he never deserved to get hurt! I hurt him, and now I'm gonna pay for what I did!" Daniel shouted and slashed his neck, leaving another deep cut.

Adam did it again. Taking out the sword and slapping Daniel, harder.

"Are you out of your fucking mind you dumb shit!?" Adam yelled in anger, with tears in his eyes.

"You don't know how much I hurt him, asshole! I hurt so many people in my life before I even came here! I lost my mother, my grandfather, and I was alone! I always tried to help others, but I only end up hurting them in the process!" Daniel screamed, while tears of his own fell.

"YOU DON'T KNOW WHAT HAPPENED TO ME! I COULDN'T SAVE MY PARENTS, MY SIBLINGS, MY FAMILY, MY FRIENDS AND EVEN MY GIRLFRIEND! THEY WERE ALL TAKEN FROM ME FROM THOSE MOTHERFUCKING TERRORISTS AND I COULDN'T DO A DAMN THING BECAUSE I NEVER LISTENED TO MY GODFORSAKEN SURROUNDINGS AND **I STILL FUCKING CAN'T AND I NEVER WILL BE ABLE TO IN MY CURSED LIFE!**" Adam roared at Daniel, with his eyes red and bloodshot, while his cheeks were raw, covered with tears.

Daniel lost it as well, and punched Adam in the gut, hard, making the girls gasp.

"YOU THINK YOU'RE THE ONLY ONE WHO HAS PROBLEMS!? WHEN I WAS 10 YEARS OLD, MY OWN GRANDFATHER SLAPPED ME IN THE FACE, SAYING I WAS A SAD EXCUSE OF A GRANDSON! YOU WANNA KNOW WHAT ELSE!? I RAN AWAY AND IN AN ALLEYWAY, A GANG OF DRUNK MEN FOUND ME **AND THEY FUCKING RAPED ME!"** Daniel screamed, his eyes bloodshot red, and a pool of tears falling.

Adam was shaking heavily, his fists shaking too, while he looked very angry, his eyes and cheeks filled with tears.

Meanwhile Ian grew tired of their venting and fired his tesla gun at both of them at 2 percent. He fired, causing the two to scream in pain. They fell to the ground and panted. Their tears still falling.

After a few seconds, they looked at each other, but instead of showing anger, they showed sympathy.

"I'm sorry…. I'm so sorry… I didn't know you were raped… I didn't even know you lost your family…." Adam quietly said, sobbing.

"I'm so sorry too….I didn't know you lost your family, friends and girlfriend to terrorists…." Daniel whispered, with a choking sob.

"What the fuck is wrong with me?" Adam sobbed.

"I'm such a fucking idiot." Daniel sobbed.

Everyone was looking at the two broken humans, in shock. They didn't know they had such tragic backstories.

The two hugged each other tightly, whispering 'I'm sorry' over and over.

Then they look at Ian, with total regret in their eyes. He also showed sympathy to the humans.

"We're so sorry." They bowed to him.

"We acted like a bunch of idiots." Daniel said.

"We didn't mean to hurt you." Adam said.

He just look at them not saying a word. Still though, he felt sympathy to them.

"If you don't want to accept our forgiveness for our actions, we understand." Daniel whispered.

"We deserve your silent treatment and anger." Adam added as well.

Ian still didn't say anything. He didn't know what to do. Then, a warm hand was placed on his shoulder. He looked and saw the wolf girl. She smiled and nodded, telling him to accept their forgiveness.

He sighed and looked at them again, while they still had their heads bowed to him. "I guess I can't stay angry with you two forever."

They looked at him, eyes filled with hope.

"But if I ever feel threatened even in the smallest way, you will not see me again." He declared.

Daniel smiled. "I give you my vow, as a warrior and Samurai, I will never hurt you again."

"Neither will I." Adam smiled while wiping his tears.

"So what's your name?" asked Daniel.

"74." Ian said

"Wait I thought your name is-?" The wolf girl said, before he placed a hand over her mouth.

"Don't say my name please. I only give to people I...know and trust." Ian said.

"So, you're hiding your real name, but you like to be called 74?" Adam asked.

Ian/74 nodded.

The two smiled. "We understand if you don't want to tell us your real name. You can tell us when you're ready." Daniel stated with his smile.

A nod from Ian/74. He was glad they didn't push him to ask for his real name.

The snow white wolf girl sniffed the area and looked up in the sky. "We're going to have a snow storm. We better get back to the caves, now." She said.

The group nodded and they followed the wolves. A few minutes later, they entered a large cave. It was huge, big enough to fit more groups. As they entered, a blizzard came out of nowhere.

"Looks like we'll be stuck here tonight." Adam said.

"By the way, we never got your names." Daniel said to the wolf sisters.

"Oh, how rude of us." The white wolf smiled warmly. "My name is Snowy. These are my sisters." She pointed at the black one. "That's Ebony."

"Greetings." Ebony smiled.

"And that's that's our youngest, Shady." She said to the gray wolf.

"Nice to meet all of you." Shade smiled.

(Daniel POV)

We all finished our introductions. It was nice to meet new faces. I looked at 74, who looked more calm than before. I still felt bad for what Adam and I did to him. I have to make it up to him.

The cold wind from the blizzard blew a little in the caves, causing Gel to shiver a little. I wrapped my arm around her, trying to keep her warm.

"The blizzard is getting worse." I pointed out while looking at the mouth of the cave. "We better move further in, if we want to stay warm."

They all nodded in agreement. We all moved deeper in the cave, and it was getting a little dark.

Meanwhile as we went farther in the cave we could see a... light? When we looked into the part where the light was we saw a….beach in the cave? The light was from glowstone on the ceiling and there was sand and water.

"Oh my Notch... a beach? I've never seen one in a cave before." Gel said.

"A what?" Snowy asked.

"A beach. It's basically a place surrounded by sand water." I explained. "People usually come around during hot days to places like this to either swim in the water, or bathe in the sun." I explained.

"Well, since we'll be staying here for a while, why don't we relax?" Adam suggested.

"I'm down with it. After today, I need a breather." I said while stretching. I see a chart with a note on it and it read

"*I see you're in a cave with a beach, so I gave you all swimwear. I cannot see everything that you do, but I can feel it. ~Notch"*

I chuckled and shook my head. "Hey, I found some suits we can wear!" I called to the group.

Every one of us grabbed one. They were confused to how they have swimsuits that can wear them. I simply answered, 'Notch.' We took turn going into a area to change that we could see all got into our swimming outfits. The boys and I were first. After 74 came out, he was still wearing his gas mask, and trench coat. But he was wearing his swimming trunks I think. I couldn't tell because the trench coat is very long and his boots.

"Hey, 74. No offense, but wouldn't it be a better idea to take the mask and trench coat off? I mean, you might get hot under those things?" I asked. He just look at us. I couldn't tell what his expression was, due to the mask under his face.

"Please?" Shady begged with puppy eyes.

"...Fine." 74 said almost at a whisper. He carefully rose his hands and grabbed his mask. After hearing a faint hissing sound, he slowly took the mask off, revealing his face. Needless to say, both Adam and I were stunned. He looked really cool.

"Woah." I breathed. I then look at the girls and they were shock to see he was a human like me and Adam. He must be the third human Notch send here to help me.

"Why are you all looking at me like that?" 74 asked, feeling a little scared.

"Dude...you look awesome." I smiled. Not gonna lie. He looked like a badass. His glasses even fit him perfectly.

He then took of his boots and he was shorter about 5'10" (177.8 cm) i could see in his eyes they was mad and sad. He was slightly shorter than Adam and the rest of us.

"How come you wear all of this? You look like a great guy to wear all of that to show your true self?" I asked smiling. He still just look at me. Then he took off his trench coat I was shocked. Around every part of his body, were a lot of scars and cuts on almost every part of his body had a scar of one type or another.

"Dude...what the hell happened to you? Did...I do that?" I asked, hoping I didn't.

He just shook his head, much to my relief. "But….who did this to you?"

74 just looked away. I can see in his eyes, was slight fear.

"This is something you don't want to talk about, right?" Adam asked.

He slowly nodded.

Adam and I smiled warmly. "If this is something you don't want to share, you don't have to say a word."

Now that we wear out of our shock we could see him better. He had a skinny build, a little too skinny and he had a necklace. It was black with a crimson diamond on it.

"That's a very cool necklace you have, 74." I said smiling. "Makes you look like a badass."

"I agree." Adam nodded.

He was silent for a few seconds then he said, "It's from...a friend...the only person I trusted before this..his name is...Freddy."

"Well, whoever this Freddy guy, is. I know you are lucky to have a friend like him." I said smiling.

"Wait... what about your parents?" Shady asked.

"They said I'm going to hell." He whispered.

Adam and I gasped in shock. Who in their own minds would even say such a thing to him, let alone their own child? That's just sick.

I walked up to him, and gently placed my hand on his shoulder. He flinched a little, but he looked into my eyes.

"I'm so sorry that your own parents would say such a thing to you. It must have been hard to cope with something so horrible like that." I then smiled a little. "But, you don't have to worry about all of that shit anymore. You're here in Minecraftia. We can all be your family. We all look out for each other."

"Do you at least want to know why they said that?" 74 asked.

"If it will make you feel better. It's not good to keep something in for a long time. It's always good to talk about it." Adam said as he too walked

up to him.

"It just because I didn't want to go to a temple and 'pay' my respect to God as they put it. My mom's friend brainwash her without her knowing and forced me and my dad to go there. My dad finally broke and was trying to force me to go with them. Darn it, I'm not religious, I'm spiritual, and I don't believe you should go to a stupid building and 'pay' your respect to God. I believe you should just be a good person to have God's respect and I don't even know if God is a male or a female." 74 explained.

"That is true, not many people know about God completely. He's still a mystery to us all. I may be a christian, but there's still so much I don't know myself. But you are right on something. It's important to follow what you believe is right. Make your own decisions in life." I said smiling.

"We don't care if you're spiritual, or christian. You are you, and we are happy for who you are. Nothing will ever change that." Adam smiled.

74 then just look at me and I could see a very small sigh of..hope.

"Do….you all mean that?" He asked.

"Of course, 74." I smiled. "We're all happy to have a friend like you." The girls and Adam smiled and nodded in agreement.

"One more thing about my friend... I see him as a big brother." 74 said.

"He must mean that much to you, huh?" I asked, feeling a little sad about that part.

"I… trusted him with my life." 74 whispered, his eyes slightly brimming with tears.

I frowned sadly. "I'm so sorry you were separated from the only person that you trust. I know we can never replace him." I smiled sadly. "But...we will always be there for you. If you ever need to talk, or need

anyone, you have us. We're part of your family now. Nothing will ever change that."

74's eyes were brimming with more tears. He was also trying to hold in his sobs. I then gently pulled him in a warm hug.

"Let it out, bro. It's alright." I whispered.

That's what he did. He started crying. Adam and the rest of the girls gathered in group hug, comforting him. 74 just cried in our arms. I felt so horrible that he went through so much. No matter what, I'll always be there for him, and I'll always try to make him happy.

The crying let on for around 5 minutes, until he finally calmed. We all broke the group hug. He sniffed a few times, while wiping his tears.

"No more crying, 74." I said in a warm voice while smiling. "Smile."

He looked up at me, and at long last, he smiled. A true smile.

It was an awkward smile like he not used to smiling.

"Thank you." He thanked in a whisper.

I smiled and patted his back gently. "Anytime, 74." I turned to the girls. "It's been a long day for us all. Let's enjoy ourselves and let's have some fun!"

The girls all cheered for that.

The girls when to the change area, and change one by one they come out wearing one piece bathing suits. The three of us were blushing up a storm. Their top bikinis were barely containing their large breasts.

"*Oh, lord have mercy."* I thought.

"You boys like what you see?~" Mentaru smirked while she gave her bust a slight shake.

'*HELP!*' All three of us thought.

"Mentaru." Kosei started.

"Sorry, mother." She apologized, but she still smirked at us.

I coughed. "Well, how about we get some light and go for a dip?"

They all nodded in agreement. Many of the girls went swimming, while some of us bathed in the warm light.

"Aaaaaah, this is the life." Adam sighed, sunbathing.

"I know what you mean. It's still so surprising that there's a beach in a cave out here in the snowy biome." I said sunbathing next to him.

"y….yeah." 74 said, going into the water.

"Oh Danieeeeel.~" I looked up and saw Mentaru and Mizu in front of me, each of them with different sexy poses, making me blush.

"Mizu and I want your opinion. Who's suit do you like more? Mine or hers?~" She asked with her voice filled with lust.

"Oh, I'd be careful if I were you, handsome." Mizu smirked.

"Sooo...which is it?~" Mentaru asked, crossing their arms, as their breasts were pushed up.

"Uh…..w-well I…." I was blushing like an idiot. These dragon girls definitely knew how to seduce a guy.

"We're waiting.~" Mizu smirked.

"W-well, not gonna lie, you both have amazing swimsuits. Both of you are both gorgeous and sexy in them." I truthfully answered.

Both blushed heavily, and their smirks widened.

"We hope you would answer that.~" Mentaru licked her lips.

The two then quickly got both of my sides and held my arms. Their breasts pressing against my arms and shoulders. My blush and erection wasn't helping.

Adam could only chuckle. *"Haha. Good thing I'm not in that situation."*

"Master!"

Adam groaned. *"I spoke too soon!"* His three dragon girls tackled him and the three held him, making their warm orbs press against his chest and arms, giving him a massive blush. It only got worse when they were nuzzling and licking and kissing his cheeks.

"I don't even know your names." Adam mumbled.

"You're supposed to name us, master." The wind girl smiled sweetly.

"What are our names, master?" The cyan girl asked.

"I wish to know my name too, master.~" The pink girl purred with her lust filled smirk.

"*God, this whole 'master' thing is gonna take a lot of time to get use to."* Adam thought.

"Well….your name can be Dasher." He pointed at the green girl. "Your name will be Kai." He said to the cyan girl. "And your name will be Glimmer." He said to the purple haired girl.

The three smiled brightly by their new names and hugged Adam tighter. Their bust pressing against his face. He felt his face turn red and his erection was growing.

I chuckled. *"Karma, bro."*

74 was confused by all of this. The girls acting very strange around us, and even the three girls calling Adam, 'Master'.

"If you don't mind me asking, what's up with the girls?" He asked.

I chuckled sheepishly. "Well, it's kinda funny when you put it like this. Some of the girls with us are...part of our….well...harems." I answered blushing.

74's face turned red when I explained about that part.

"A….harem? Is that even legal?" He asked.

"Well, due to the fact that there hasn't been a lot of boys seen for years in Minecraftia, Harems are legal. Not only that, due to the fact that female mobs, and dragons only live in minecraftia, they all have gone...Bisexual." I explained again while my blush went deeper.

A nod from 74 with his face being redder than a tomato.

"I know this is kinda something unexpecting, but you'll get used to it." I assured.

"I'll….take your word for it." 74 nodded again, and resumed swimming.

He's really not much of a talker, but at least Adam and I are making good progress with him. Hopefully, he'll open up to us soon.

As I saw him swimming, I couldn't stop thinking about his scars. It was hard for me to see all of those wounds and cuts all over his body. How could he live through such a hard life? Who would even hurt such an innocent boy like himself? No, I shouldn't think negative about that now. 74 is no longer on Earth. He's here, in Minecraftia. His new home, with his new family and friends. Still if anyone wishes to hurt him, I'll make sure that person will never see the light of day again. I'll always protect him.

I can tell he's a good swimmer. He may look shorter, but he can move pretty fast. He can even defend himself well with his weapons, but what if there's a situation he will be in and he doesn't have his weapons? He doesn't look built for combat, but I think I can fix that. When we return back to my house, I can probably teach him how to fight, close hand to hand combat.

"Daniel," I looked and saw Mentaru on her belly, with a bottle of sunscreen next to her. "Would you mind putting some sunscreen on my skin?~"

I gulped a little. "Uh, sure." I grabbed the bottle and squeezed some of the cream out. After rubbing it on my hands, I started to rub her back. Mentaru let off a loud, sexy moan. Jesus, she's doing that on purpose.

"Mmmmm.~ Right there, baby.~" She moaned.

I just sighed and continued to spread the sunscreen on her back.

"Stop messing with me Mentaru." I said very quietly.

"Yes master… baby.~" she said, giving me a naughty wink.

I literally almost choked on my own spit. Now she's gonna call me master? What's next, fucking her and she invites her mother?

"I can hear your thoughts, cutie.~" She smirked.

That caught me by shock, and my face flushed red. "W-w-what!? Y-You did not." I pointed out.

"Oh yes I did. I can ask my milf of a mom to show you a great time with me. She's great with blowjobs.~" Mentaru licked her lips, showing bedroom eyes to me.

"*Oh, fuck me."* Wait! No! I didn't mean that!

"Is that a yes?~"

"Uh….no?" I asked starting to back up. However, I was covered in a pink aura,and I was trapped in her psychic grip.

"You know, you're bad at lying, cutie.~" She whispered in my ear. She looked down and saw my erection poking through my suit. She smirked and gently grabbed it, caughing me to gasp. "It seems your little friend has other plans.~"

She softly stroked my clothed manhood gently. I bit my tongue and lips, fighting back a moan.

As I was about to moan, I heard a voice, "what are you doing to him?"

I looked behind me and saw 74 blushing.

"Help me." I mouthed to him.

"Oh, just talking to my sweet master.~" Then, Mentaru slipped her hand in my trunks, stroking my hard manhood.

"Why are you touching his crotch?" 74 asked.

"I haven't felt a real, warm dick in so long. I was thinking of maybe releasing my inner lust, have a little 'fun' with my master.~" The psychic dragon female battered her eyelashes at me.

"Warm what?" 74 blushed harder.

"Mentaru." I looked and saw Kosei walking up to us. "Daniel does not look comfortable to what you're doing to him. Please release him." She spoke in her angel voice.

"But…"

"Sweetie…" She smiled warmly.

She finally sighed. "Yes, mother." She finally got her hand out of my bathing suit and released me, much to my relief. I breathed heavily and

finally fought off my erection.

Kosei walked up to her daughter. "Please try to control your dragon hormones."

"I'll try, but no promises." She smiled.

She smiled as well. "Good." Out of the bloom, Mentaru grabbed her mother's head and forced her lips onto hers. She literally didn't fight it and kissed her own daughter back, tongues dancing in their mouths.

My jaw just dropped and my face went red again. 74's reaction was shocking as well. His face was red as well.

"*Fucking hell. I don't care if they're mother and daughter, that is so fucking hot."* I thought.

Mentaru broke the kiss and fondled with her mother's large bust. She looked at me with lust in that known smirk of hers. "You think that's hot, sexy? How about we turn up the heat?~"

"Gottagobye!" I shouted in panic and ran off to a further part of the beach. I was not gonna stick around for this.

(3rd Person)

74 watched Daniel run like a madman. He was kinda surprised he could run so fast.

"Oh, I hope he would stick around." Mentaru whined cutely.

"Maybe some other time." Kosei smiled at her daughter. She then turned her attention to 74. "74, if I presume. There's something we need to take care of."

" would that be?" 74 said shyly.

Kosei giggled. "Nothing too important. We were assigned to grant you our power."

"Your...power?" He asked, slightly surprised.

She nodded. "That's right." She held her hand up and it glowed. The other dragons came together and they all held their hands out. Their orbs appeared. Like Adam, much of them didn't glow, but Kasai, Mizu and Mentaru's orbs did.

"It seems fire, water and mental have chosen you." She smiled warmly.

The orbs of power slowly flew to him and entered his body. 74 felt their power flowing in his body. His body being more muscular than before. Like the other two, his eyes became that of a dragon. His eyes flowed with the red, blue and pink aura.

"You are now bonded with the power of fire, water and mental. My daughters will teach you to wield your new gift." Kosei explained, still smiling.

"I...t-thank you…." He thanked shyly. He was not expecting something like this.

"There's another bonus to your gift as well." She smiled.

"W...what would that be?" He asked.

At that, three orbs shot out from his body and they glowed brightly, shifting. When the glow died down, he saw three females in front of him.

The first girl was fire. Her fire red hair was short to her neck, tied to a small ponytail. She wears a red vest, with a crimson tank top. She has dark red short pants on, and her breast size was at P-cup.

The second girl was water. Her blue hair tied up, and fell to her right shoulder. She was wearing a light blue t-shirt, and tight skinny blue pants. Her bust size was at N-cup.

The third girl had pink hair. It was slightly shorter than the others, but still made her look attractive. Her clothing was a small pink vest, and very short dark pink pants that went to her inner thighs. She was also wearing thongs. She wore a very light pink bra, covering her O-cup breasts.

"These are your dragons. They will protect you and make you happy with their lives." Kosei explained.

"H-hello, m-master." The water girl bowed politely.

"It's a pleasure to be with you, master." The pink one said shyly.

"W-we will do everything in our power to keep you h-happy, master." The fire girl smiled shyly.

"H… hi." 74 said shyly. He felt slightly comfortable with these girls being shy like him. He was also blushing a little to how huge their busts were.

"We'll let you get comfortable with your Dragons." Kosei smiled and they all left.

With them gone, 74 looked at his new dragons. They were blushing to how handsome he was.

"So...umm...anything you girls wanna do?" He asked.

"W-well….we will follow with what you tell us to do, master." The water girl answered.

"Umm...h-how about a small walk around the area?" He suggested.

They smiled lightly and nodded. The four walked around the area, watching the others. Adam was still getting his face smothered by his

dragons bust. Daniel was at a small sand hill, relaxing, but still had his blush from before. The others were just relaxing in the warmth, or playing in the pool.

They moved a little further away from the group and came across a rocky part of the cave.

"Achoo."

"Bless you." 74 said to his dragons.

"Um...neither of us sneezed, master." The red girl said.

That was when 74 knew they weren't alone in the caves. He then heard the sound of pebbles and rocks moving. Out from behind, was a shadow. 74 stepped back in surprise, while his dragon girls stood ready to protect him, if necessary.

"Um...h-hello." The shadow greeted, in a sweet female voice.

"Um...hi?" 74 greeted back.

The shadow moved and what he saw….was a slime girl.

She was at his height, and looked like Gel. Her color was Crimson, and her breast size was at G-cup.

"Hello….My name is Fay." The crimson slime girl greeted with a smile.

The dragon girls relaxed, knowing she wasn't an enemy. 74 also relaxed.

As they relaxed, Fay, walked a little closer to 74.

"Are you a human?" She asked.

He slowly nodded in answer.

"I knew you looked like one. But, you don't look like the human I saw from the Slime kingdom." She said.

74 arch a brow in confusion. Slime Kingdom? She's seen a human before?

"You're a really cute human though. I love your hair." Fay smiled and stroked his hair.

74 blushed madly. This was the first time anyone, let alone a girl who has ever said something like that about his hair.

"Would it be okay to ask for your name?" She asked with a sweet smile.

"74." He answered.

"That's a very nice name. Though I never heard of anyone having a number for a name." Fay said.

"I get that sometimes." 74 replied.

She then saw how well the three dragon girls were loyal to him. The three were smiling at him, and held a promise to help him any way they can.

"So, what are you doing in this cave?" Fay asked.

"We kinda got caught in a snowstorm, so we're hanging here for the moment." 74 explained.

"Oh, okay. Are there others with you?" She asked.

"Yeah. Two other humans, a few mob princesses, and the elemental dragons." He answered.

"Wow. That's a huge group." Fay said. She then thought of something. "I know we just met, but I was wondering… if I can travel with your group?

It's been lonely for me for a while since I left the Slime kingdom." She had a dress on, which was a rich red, with a red ruby necklace.

"Do you have some slime on you?" Fay asked.

"Um..no?" 74 answered with confusion in his voice. "Is there something about it you need?"

"I need it to heal myself I been in here for.. I don't know a week and I need it to be healthy." she explained.

"I see." He nodded in understanding. "If...I recall, we might have a slime girl with us."

"Then please, bring me to her." She said.

He slowly nodded and guided her back at the group.

(Daniel POV)

I was finally relaxing a little after what happened from before. I still can't get that kiss out of my head. I never even knew Kosei was a Milf mother. Call me crazy, but it's hot as hell.

I then felt a warm body pressing against mine. I opened my eyes to see Gel, smiling sweetly at me.

"Are you doing okay?" She asked.

I smiled. "I'm okay, just wanted to take a breather for a moment." I answered her.

She smiled and snuggled in my chest. I didn't mind her company at all. She is one of the most non sexual girls in my harem. I sighed and stroked her slime hair, making her coo in response.

As I was doing this, I heard a voice.

"Princess Gel?!" We both looked up and we were surprised to see another slime girl. She was crimson though.

"Fay!?" She asked in surprise as she got up.

"By Notch, I can't believe it's you!" She said in happiness as she ran to her and hugged her happily. Gel also hugged her back.

"It's been awhile since I saw you." Gel smiled at her.

"You two know each other?" I asked in surprise.

"Yes. Fay and I are best friends. I usually visit her from time to time in the Slime Kingdom. We've been friends since we were kids." Gel explained.

"Princess. I need goo. I haven't eaten any goo in days." Fay said, as her stomach growled.

"Why is it you need goo?" I asked in confusion.

I then saw 74 walking up to us as well.

"From what….she told me, she needs goo in order to keep her body healthy." He explained.

"So….how is this gonna work?" I asked.

Gel then did something I was not expecting at all. She literally grabbed the top part of her bikini and pulled it off, exposing her breasts.

"G-Gel, what are you doing!?" I called out in both shock and surprise while I flushed badly.

74 didn't say anything, but he cover his eyes before he could see her naked breasts. Maybe he never seen breasts before.

"Giving Fay her slime." He responded.

"Does this have to involve getting it through your breasts?" I asked, while rubbing my eyes.

"There is another way, but it's…" She pointed downwards, extending my blush further.

"J-just please get this over with." I quickly said.

Gel nodded and looked back at the crimson slime girl. She nodded and grabbed one of her breasts. She latched her lips onto her right nipple and started to suck in her slime.

Gel had to fight back a moan to keep both of us from getting an erection. As she was "feeding" her, Fay's hips and thighs started to get bigger and her bust expanded from a G-cup into an I-cup she also grew 7 inches (17.78cm) in height.

"*Lord have mercy."* I thought, blushing heavily.

Fay let go of her nipple and sighed. "Thank you, Princess Gel."

Gel smiled and placed her bikini top back on. "It was my pleasure."

"Is it done?" 74 asked.

"All clear, bro." I said.

74 uncovered his eyes. When he saw Fays newly developed body, he blushed madly.

"Slimes bodies change when they drink from other slimes." I explained.

"Does….this happen a lot?" He asked.

"You have no idea." I replied, recalling the incident from the Slime Kingdom. *'My poor dick and balls.'* I thought

'*Do you want to try to share that goo with us..master?~*' I heard a voice in my head.

'*GAH! Get out of my head, Mentaru!*' I shouted. She giggled and cut the link.

"So Fay, how have you been doing?" Gel asked.

"I've been doing good. I decided to explore Minecraftia, but it has been lonely traveling by myself." She explained.

"If you want, you can travel with us." I offered smiling.

"You don't mind?" She asked surprised.

"Not at all. Having another person in the group will make our journey more interesting." I explained.

Fay looked at 74, blushing slightly, she smiled and nodded. "I would love to."

"Welcome to the group, Fay." I welcomed smiling.

After adding Fay to the group, we moved back to the others. They all greeted Fay with their welcome, making her smile. For the remainder of the day, Fay spend time with 74, his dragons and Shady. The five girls seemed to get along with him quite well, especially to each other. Seeing him with the five, I knew they'll make him happy. Even though they're not part of his harem now, I have a feeling they will.

(meanwhile with 74)

Shady was look at 74. New muscles on his new body and she like them a lot..a little too much.

"M..master?" Asked his red dragon.

He stopped and looked at her, but couldn't keep eye contact because he was shy to be around them.

"Y...yes?" He asked her.

"I..I was wondering if it makes you d..discernible if we can change our clothes, master."

'*Wait, they can do that? That's...pretty impressive. Hmm, I think an oversize sweater that cover the top half of their legs and cover their hands could look nice with them, and maybe some black Trousers would look nice too.'* He thought.

Then somehow what he was thinking, they actually changed into the clothing he thought about. Their sweaters were at the same color of their skin. It was just a little darker, they then look at 74 and see he was shocked by this.

"Wha...h….how did you…?" He was loss of words to this.

"You see master, we can generate any type of clothing to your own desire. From regular clothing, to even armor." The pink girl explained.

"But….how did you...even know….what I thought?" He asked further.

"Oh...I simply...read your mind, master." She answered.

"Co..could you call me 74 and not master? It's going to get confusing since the others are calling the two master as well." He asked.

"Very well….master 74." She smiled.

"N...no i mean just 74." He said again.

"I...guess we can try to call you just...74, but I guess calling you master is just a habit, since we are your dragons." She explained.

"S..so um what else can you do if i ask you three?"

The three dragons smiled.

"We can do nearly anything you tell us." The water dragon answered.

"Anything you ask us, we will do it as told, no questions asked." The red girl smiled.

"B..but could you give me an explanation of what you can do?" He asked again.

"Go on and try something. Give one of us an order. Anything, really." The pink girl replied.

"Um..what do you have for weapons to defend yourselves?" He asked.

"We can use our dragon Chi and generate any weapon of your choosing." The fire girl answered.

"Could I see what you girls think of?" He asked.

The fire girl nodded and held her hand out. Fire danced around her hand, and out of the bloom, a fire great sword was created in her left hand. The flames danced around the blade part, and she has a shield the size of her body in her right hand.

"Woah...that's….amazing." 74 breathed in awe.

"Like we explained before, we can generate any weapon you want." The water girl said again.

"Could you generate an AK-12?" He asked.

Surprising him, she smiled and nodded. She held her hands together and water formed around it, taking the shape of something. The water blasted and created an AK-12 like he asked for in her left hand. He then thought for a second and a 100 round drum is a longer barrel with a sword bayonet on the right side of the barrel, with a grenade launcher under the barrel.

74 was blown away. It was incredible for his dragons to create any weapon of his choosing.

"Wait do you know metric?" He asked and the girls nodded.

'*Hmm that's pretty cool.'* He then look at pink and ask if she could make an Barrett XM109 and she did but this one had a sword bayonet on the end of it.

'*These dragons keep surprising me and their left handed that make me feel...good. I'm not the only left handed person here.'* 74 thought.

"So,um...what else can I ask?" He asked again.

"Anything you wish, 74." The pink girl smiled.

"Anything?"

"Anything." The three replied.

"Um...tell me what you think of what I will ask you?" He asked.

The three smiled.

"Well we could…" the blue one blush.

"Could what?" he ask he then look to his left and see Fay and shady making a sand castle.

"Could we make a sand castle?" He asked.

They smiled and nodded.

"One more thing if it isn't too much to ask?" he asked.

"Of course. What is it you desire?" The fire girl asked.

"Could you three 'grow' freckles under your eyes? I find them...cute." He asked blushing.

The three blushed, but they smiled and nodded. From that, freckles grew from under their eyes. There wasn't too many or too little. There were just right.

"And um...could you girls have glasses on too?" He asked.

They nodded again and each created glasses. Each of them had their matching colors. They were square like his, he found them to looked very cute.

"You three look...very cute." 74 said quietly, while blushing a crimson red.

The three blushed heavily, but they smiled sweetly at him.

"Thank you 74 for that. It makes us happy that you're happy." The pink girl said sweetly.

Then, they walk to the beach area and the girls use their powers to create shovels and buckets. They shoveled, but then to their surprise, the sand were created into small cubes.

"That's new." 74 said.

The fire girl walked over to collect the sand, but then it went into her hand and it vanished.

"Huh? Where did it go?" She asked in confusion and surprise.

"This is...very unusual." 74 said.

"The sand went into your inventory." A voice said.

They all turned to see Daniel and Gel walking.

"To open your inventory, just swipe your hand down. Like this," He swiped his hand down, and showed his inventory screen. He canceled it, and resumed his stroll with Gel.

The fire girl took his advice and stroked her hand down. Like Daniel, her inventory screen showed as well.

"That's also new." 74 said.

The fire girl touched to where the sand blocks are and they popped out of thin air. It landed in her hand. It was small, and had the number '12' on it, hovering slightly above the sand cube. She never expected something like this before. The fire girl then tried to put it down. When she did, a full size sand cube appeared and landed to where she wanted it to. Not only that, the number above the small one in her hand decreased to '11'.

"*Interesting."* she thought.

"So...the number on the small cube….is how much sand cubes you have left." 74 said.

The fire girl continued to place the sand around the area, until the number dropped to 0, and the cube vanished.

74 was starting to make a sandcastle with his dragons. In a long time, he hasn't had such a good time. He was actually happy. He was having fun with the girls that care for him. He was with those that cared for him.

74 then ask one of his dragons something then a ball appeared in his left hand then he threw it. Shady saw the ball pass her head then yelled, "BALL!" she then went running for it as her sisters did the same thing. Shady got it ball in her mouth and said. "I got it!" happily.

(Back to 74)

"7..74 what are you doing?" His fire dragon ask

"I'm um...making a trench for the castle." He answered

"Oh ok..do you need anything?" She asked him.

"...What your names?" He asked.

"You give us names, 74. They can be anything really." She responded.

"*Create your own names…"* He thought for a moment. "Hmm...how about….I call you….Ember….the water girl….Aqua….and the pink one… Rosalite?"

The fire girl smiled warmly by his choice of names. "I love my new name. From here on out, we'll be named Ember, Aqua, and Rosalite."

74 then saw something in the corner of his eye. It was shady sitting down cross legs with the ball in her mouth with her tails going back and forth really fast. She then dropped the ball, and it rolled to his leg.

74 picked it up and looked at Shady.

"Throw it please?" She asked happily.

He looked at the ball, and then chucked it.

"I GOT IT!" Shady called and ran for it.

74's lips formed a small grin, and felt a small chuckle rise to his throat. Shady looked cute and playful when she was chasing after the ball.

74 felt something warm and soft pressing against his side. Turning, he sees Ember wrapping her arms around him.

"Ember...what...are you doing?" He asked.

She pulled away and blushed. "Sorry. I just had this feeling to hug you."

He blushed as well. "That...felt kinda….nice. Can….I have another one?"

Ember smiled, and wrapped her arms around him again. She felt so warm and comforting with her body pressing against his.

He slowly rose his arms and finally hugged her back gently. As she did, her breast pushed on his chest. He felt his blush growing a little more. He actually can't deny it. Her bust felt so soft against his chest.

"*Does it feel good 74?*" He heard Ember's voice in his head.

"*It...feels...nice.*" He replied back in thought.

"*I'm happy it does.*" She said.

After a few more seconds of hugging they let go.

(**Meanwhile with Daniel)**

Daniel saw how much 74 was bonding with his dragons. It made him feel happy that he was getting along with those who are like him, and the fact the girls are taking a liking to him.

"You're one special kid, 74." He smiled warmly at him.

"*Can I have fun time with him now mother?*" A familiar voice asked in his mind.

Daniel's eyes widened. *"Oh shit."*

"*Fine, but only kissing.*" He heard Kosei.

Daniel started to panic. He quickly looked around for somewhere to hide. He ran around the area, until he found something he wasn't expecting.

"A trap door?" He quietly questioned.

"Oh Danieeeeeeeeel.~"

The young man started to sweat and he quickly opened the trap door and jumped in. He quietly shut it and went down some ladders. When he got to the bottom, he rested against the wall and took a breather. He finally calmed and looked to where he wounded up.

What he saw was a chair with some shackles on it. The room also had a bed, with dimmed redstone torches. A pole was also two blocks away from it.

Daniel's eyes winded, knowing what kind of room this is.

"Oh no." he whispered.

"Your mine now Danny.~" Said a deep seductive voice from behind him.

Daniel felt a cold shiver down his spine and he slowly turned. He saw Mentaru. She found him.

"Come here, sexy.~" She jump at him but Daniel jump out of the way.

She jump on the chair but the shackles were on her wrists and feet now.

"Well well well. Looks like the tables have turned." Daniel smirked with a chuckle.

"GIVE ME THAT FUCKING DICK NOW!" She yelled trying to get out of the shackles.

"Hmmm….how about….no?" His smirk widened. He was enjoying this moment.

What this, he looked to his right and saw a leaver. He pulled it and her feet where pull straight like she was on a bed and there was feathers moving to her feet.

"NO! Anything but this!" She yelled, trying to get out of the shackles with all of her might.

"Sorry, Menty. You have to pay the price for trying to have fun with me." His smirk grew. "Time for your punishment." He pushed a button next to the lever, and the feathers started to tickle her feet.

"Hahahahahaahahahahahah!" she screamed in laughter.

"What's the matter? Dragon got your tongue?" He taunted.

"P-p-p-pleeee-heheheeease! N-n-no more!" Mentaru laughed while tears fell from her eyes.

"Oh, what this button do?" Daniel push it and now the shackles moved her arms up. Some of the feathers moved up and began tickling her armpits. At this, Mentaru roared in laughter.

"S-S-STOP! I GIVE GIV-HIHIHIHIHIHVVVVEE!" She begged while still laughing

"But you're going to try to fuck me as soon as you get out of there." then he found another button a push it a...ball gag was put in her mouth, silencing her laughter.

'*OKAY OKAY! YOU WIN! I WON'T FUCK YOU! PLEASE STOP TICKLING ME! PLEEEASE!"* She begged while her ball gag was muffling her laughter.

Daniel thought she had enough now. He pressed the buttons again, and the feathers drew back and the ball gag was removed. Mentaru breathed heavily, slightly giggling from her tickle assault.

"I never knew you were so ticklish. Now I found out your weakness." He smirked while chuckling.

"Never do that again. Other wise when I have sex with you, I'll break your pelvis." She said.

"Why are you so intent on fucking me?" He asked.

"You're a boy for Notch sake, and that means you have a dick. I've been waiting for so long to find a boy. I wanted to be held by him, and even have fun flirting with him." She explained.

"So...you've been waiting for years...for a mate?" He asked.

Mentaru nodded. "Yes. When I saw you, I knew you were the right person to be my mate, along with my mother and sisters." She explained. "We've been waiting to be part of a boy's harem for a long time. When Notch brought you here, I knew my dream would finally come true."

"Well, I guess 5 minutes wouldn't hurt." Daniel said.

Mentarus eyes opened up. "You mean…"

Daniel smiled and opened his arms. "Come here."

Like a frake train, Mentaru tackled him, and they both fell to the ground. Her lips were locked with his in a very hot, passionate kiss. Her tongue glided around his mouth, tasting every bit of him. She moaned so loudly. Her body shivered with excitement. This was everything she hoped for.

"*Wow. she's so good at kissing."* Daniel thought.

"*Well my mom give me a 'few' lessons."* Mentaru said in his mind.

"*Your mother taught you well. But...I'm curious. Why is your mother...a Milf?"* He asked.

"*Before we hatched, my father...died. My mother didn't know how, but he did. She felt lonely, and there wasn't a female out there who would be there for her, comfort her or even please her. When we were old enough, my sisters and I grew attached to our mom, and from then, she was our Milf mother. We didn't mind at all. It's been a 'fun' experience."* Mentaru explained her story.

"*It must have been hard for your mom."* Daniel said.

"*Yeah, it has been."* She said.

"*So….you, your sisters, and even you own mom….don't mind….sharing….me?*" He asked.

He felt Mentaru's lips move, like she was smirking. *"We don't mind at all. We all chose to be your mate for life. We can't wait to fuck you raw.~"*

Daniel blushed deeply. *"Seriously, Mentaru?"*

"*Oh yes, we're going to break your mind and give you the time of your life. One that you will never forget.~"*

Daniel then smirked in his mind. It was time to break her. *"Oh yeah? Let's see who breaks who's mind first.~"* Not seeing it coming, Daniel broke the kiss and rolled her to her knees. He was behind her back. Smirking evilly, he then grabbed her massive G-cup bust, and started to fondle them. Mentaru moaned very sexily and loud.

"Ooooooooh.~ So goooood.~" She moaned.

"Such lovely tits you have.~" He whispered with his voice all husky.

Mentaru smirked sexily. "You think they're that good?~ Watch this.~" Her body glowed pink a little and by my shock, her breasts started growing. They continued to grow, until they reached an L-cup.

"Holy….shit." He breathed.

"You like?~ We female dragons can make our bust grow any size you desire.~" She said in her deep sexy voice.

"Any size you say?" He asked.

"Any...size.~" She replied, licking her lips.

"Well, this is a sight to see."

I jolted a little by the voice. At the entrance, smiling warmly at us, was Kosei.

"Oh yes our bust size can be how big you want it or how much we want them to be" Kosei explained as she walk over to us. As she did, her breast grew. I couldn't believe my eyes. They look like they stopped at a Z-cup.

"HOLY SHIT..Your back must hurt a LOT!" I called out.

Kosei only giggled. "It doesn't bother me at all. I've been using this bust size for many years. I've gotten used to it." She explained, with her warm mother smile. "I've even seen you can't stop looking at my breasts." She added.

I blushed heavily and quickly looked away. "S-sorry. I didn't mean to stare like that."

Kosei and Mentaru giggled.

"That ok sweetie. I love you staring at my breasts." Kosei smiled sweetly. "I haven't been stared at a handsome young man for years. It's quite refreshing."

"I...um...don't know what to say..." Daniel whispered, still blushing.

"Well then, let's get this started." Said Kosei.

(VERY HEAVY LONG LEMON WARNING)(FUTA INVOLVED. YOU HAVE BEEN WARNED)

She put me on the bed next to Mentaru as Kosei sat on my other side.

Before i know it Mentaru kiss me but..there was something in her mouth. As it went into my mouth it was oh..shit goo! Nonononono not again! My body felt funny. A warmth spread into my stomach and then

went into my dick and balls. However….my manhood didn't get bigger at all. What is it she added to me?

"What...what did you do to me?" I asked.

"That's for you to find out later, hunk.~" She answered in a sexy voice.

The two grabbed me by the shoulders and gently placed me on the pillow, which was so soft. The two crawled on top of me, with their lust filled smirks never leaving. Fuck, I'm fucked….literally.

"Ready to give our new mate some….entertainment, my sweet sexy daughter?~" Kosei asked. Her deep seductive voice just made me blush deep red, and my erection grew just by her voice.

Then Mentaru took off her top and started to play with her mother's breast that were now bigger as her daughter fondled them. God, they look very sexy. Not gonna lie.

Kosei moaned in pleasure as her nipples got hard. Holy shit they look like beautiful gods.

"Awww, that's so sweet of you to call us gods." Kosei smiled.

Fuck, forgot they can read my mind.

She then grabbed her daughters top and took it off as well. Their naked breasts were open in the air. She grabbed them and squeezed them gently.

"Oooooh, mother.~" Mentaru moaned in pleasure, as she continued to please her mom.

"Now then dear Mentaru, let's show this stud how we give each other a good time.~" She smirked with lust.

Oh no…

Mentaru smirked and pressed her lips against hers. They kissed so hot, their tongues were moving around in their mouths. I can tell by the movement and their cheeks stretching. They moaned loudly, causing my erection to grow harder.

They broke the kiss, saliva dangling from their mouths.

"That's it sweetie. Play with my beautiful tits.~" Kosei moaned.

"Come mother. Let's have our nipple kiss.~" Mentaru moaned as well.

They let go of their busts, and they started to rub their breasts together. Thier massive tits pressing and squeezing. Nipples grinding and touching, getting harder and harder.

"Oh, that feels so good.~"

"I love your sexy breasts, mother.~"

They moaned and let their breasts please one another, as they held each other.

Then what I didn't expect was that Kosei put her finger in Mentaru's nipple. Then, it let it out as milk as she wanted. The fuck milk come out and Kosei finger was covered in milk. She took her finger out of her nipple and put her milk covered finger into her mouth and lick it.

"Mmmmmm.~ Your milk taste so good.~" Kosei moaned.

'*How is that fucking possible? No way breast should do that.'* I thought. I was caught by surprise by this. This has never been done by girls before.

"We found something called hentai in your mind and thought of trying this from what we saw." Mentaru explained, smirking.

I flushed heavily. "Would you stop going in my brain!? It's embarrassing!"

"Aww but it's fun seeing you masterbating for the first time." She pouted cutely.

"AHH! STOP IT!" I shouted, while shaking my head like crazy.

"Fine, but it was cute." said Mentaru

"Now sweetie, you're embarrassing him." Said Kosei, smiling warmly.

"Yes now let's get Daniel to join the fun.~"

"Well, I guess I have no other choice. No backing out now." I said

Kosei then put her nipples in front of my face a squeeze a little and milk come shooting out and hitting me in the face. I opened my mouth to let as much milk in my mouth as possible. It tasted so fucking good.

"That not all our asses can change sizes too" said Kosei, with her smirk.

"Really? Well let see what you girls got." I said.

There asses become much bigger by the time they stop growing they look like they were 70 inches (177.8cm) around. They were huge, and still so round to squeeze.

"Dear God. I didn't know a butt could get that big"I said shocked by their massive size.

The two giggled. "We're glad you like it." Kosei smiled.

"Do you prefer, big breasts, or big asses?" Mentaru asked cutely.

"Breasts are great, but I do like a side of gorgeous round asses. Adding both together just turns me on so much." I answered truthfully.

"Awww that's so sweet of you to say." She move over to him but her butt hit something when a song started to play.

"What the?" Slow, sexy beats hit the room. My face burned with a blush, and my erection just grew harder.

'*Oh boy.'*

"Oooooooh, I love this song.~" Mentaru smirked. Her eyes glowed purple and then out of shock, she got my clothing off, only leaving my underwear on. She leaned down and started licking my chest. I groaned by her soft tongue sliding against my body.

"Oooooooh, you taste delicious.~" She shuddered by my taste.

"I...um, thanks." I said blushing.

Kosei leaned down and her tongue moved around my chest as well. She too also liked my taste. I then saw that their legs were shaking, and can make out a small dribble of their cum leaking from their legs.

"I want you SO badly.~" they both said at the same time.

I chuckled. "Well, there's enough me to go around, ladies. How about you two show me what else you can do?"

They both smirked.

"Well….there is one thing we can do. I did read your mind….and found your favorite fetish." Kosei licked her lips.

My eyes widened. *"No way….does she know about….'That' fetish?"*

"Oh yes. Kosei, would you like to do the honors?~" Mentaru asked, smirking with lust.

"Just don't you put it in me please." I slightly begged, feeling the slight sting from 9 years ago.

The two frowned. They must have seen my memory of me getting raped.

Kosei smiled warmly. "Don't worry, sweetie. We'll make sure you're comfortable with what you want." She said in a sweet voice.

"Thanks." I thanked smiling back.

"Now, then," Kosei spread her legs open, while leaning against the pole and rubbed her pussy through her panties. She moaned and it started to bulge. The panties slipped off, and my fetish was before my eyes.

She bared a 12 inch (30.48cm) long, white cock.

"*Oh that's not fair. She's bigger than me."* Mentaru thought.

"You don't need to be jealous, my dear child. You can grow yours." She smiled.

Mentaru smirked and grew hers. Her panties came off as her own cock slowly grew. She then reached her mother's size.

"Daniel, you still have your servant dragons in you. Call some out, and have them join the fun.~" Mentaru smirked at me.

I blushed, but slowly nodded. Two orbs came out, one gold and one pink. They shined and created different versions of Mentaru and Kosei.

Koseis version self had golden clothing, and leggings. Her hair was puffy and big, and her breast size was at K-cup. Her fur clothing barely covered anything.

The pink one had flowing purple hair, wore belly dancer clothing, tight, very thin leggings, and a very small tight pink bra, showing off her J-cup bust.

"*This sucks the girls are bigger than me"* Daniel thought.

"We will do, as you desire, master." The two bowed to him.

"Um...let's see, start making out hard core with each other."

"*I hope they don't slap me for that."* I thought.

Out of my relief and shock, they smiled and nodded. They grabbed each other in a tight embrace and made out. Their mouths were open, tongues battling for dominance, moaning so sexily, bodies brushing against one another.

"*Wow, guess they do follow anything I say."* I thought. *"Well then let see what else I can ask them."*

"Um...strip naked and grow your breast sizes." I said.

As told, they got naked and their breasts grew. The golden one had the bust size of U-cup, and the purple girl had S-cup.

"Oooooh, me likey.~" Mentaru smirked, and licked her lips.

"Now, get on your knees." They nodded and kneeled.

"You two get right in front of The golden one. Kosei in front and Mentaru from behind." I ask Kosei and Mentaru. "And...fuck her with all the force you have."

They smirked and did what was done. They lifted the golden girl up and lined their cocks up to her pussy and anus.

"Wait, before you do that could she make her holes smaller?" The golden girl nodded and she shrunk her holes and tightened them.

"One more thing. Can you make your dicks thicker by a lot?" The two smirked by my dirty thoughts and their cocks grew until they were as thick as a brick.

"*Oh, I am going to enjoy watching this.'* I thought. I nodded to the two and they smirked.

They thrusted and forced all 12 inches (30.48cm) of their cocks in her and out.

The girl screamed, not in pain, but lost in bliss, and pleasure, which surprised me. Do they not feel pain?

"We can control our bodies with our power. We can keep ourselves from not feeling any pain whatsoever while we fuck each other." Kosei grunted as she and her daughter pounded the girl as one.

"Wait how long can you girls last, and how much can you cum?" I asked.

"As long as you ask and much as you desire." Mentaru moaned, as the two pushed their large bust into the girl, making her moan. She was covered in their soft, massive pillows.

The other girl was looking at this and was dribbling.

"Okay, on your knees and hands." I ordered.

She complied and went into a doggystyle position. I mounted her and lined my dick to her moist hole. Not warning her, I thrusted my whole rod into her, making her scream in bliss.

"Get ready.~" I grabbed her hips and started pounding her.

"Hey girls?" I asked.

"What is it?"

"Could you make me bigger? I kind feel down that your dicks and balls are bigger than mine?" I asked.

"Kiss me master and I'll grant your wish." The girl from below moaned.

I leaned down and kissed her, and she kissed back. I felt a familiar sensation and I felt my dick grow. It grew until it was at 15 inches (38.1cm) and my balls are the size of pineapples.

"Oh fuck! Yes! Yes! Yes! I love your large cock stretching me out! Fuck me like a whore in heat!~" She screamed in pleasure.

I smirked and flipped her over. I roughly grabbed her breasts and pounded her harder and faster, making her scream in ecstasy.

The golden girl was in bliss, as Kosei grabbed and squeezed her breasts, while Mentaru was making out with her. Her mother leaned in and the three had a three way kiss, all three tongues dancing around. The two grabbed her legs and hips and pounded her harder and faster.

"Girls could you maybe go faster and harder?" I asked.

"As you desire.~" They smirked and went faster and harder. The girl had her eyes rolled back and her tongue hanging out. The sound of their bodies slapping, and moaning was such a fucking turn on.

The two pounded away. Their balls slapping against each other, adding additional pleasure to them.

I then had an idea. "How about we make this more fun?~" Three more orbs came out of me and they morphed.

One was a blue girl, curly blue hair and wears a t-shirt, and short blue skirt, with E-cup breasts.

The other was Cyan. A light cyan vest, tight dark blue pants and F-cup breasts.

The third was black and white. Her hair was long, that fell to her waist, a black and white sweater, and black skirt, with a G-cup bust.

The two were getting turned on to what I was planning.

"Okay, you three, get naked, grow your breasts and bare cocks." I ordered.

"Yes, master." They bowed. They stripped naked and their bust grew. The cyan haired girl had her bust at R-cup, the water girl at L-cup, and the

black and white haired at M-cup. They grew cocks at the size of 10 inches (25.4cm) and thick as water bottles.

"Okay, You two, go to the girls, over there." I said to the cyan and blue girl. "You, come here." I said to the other.

They nodded and went to their positions.

"Now...I want you two….to thrust your cocks into the girls pussy and ass. Share with the adults."

Mentaru and Koseis eyes widened in shock, and they were shaking in excitement. The two followed the order. The cyan girl scooted next to Mentaru and the blue girl near Kosei.

"You I want you to suck on my balls hard and fast as you can and I want the girl I'm fucking to suck your cock."

She nodded and moved her body. She lined her manhood to the girl's face, and started to suck on as much as my balls that can fit in her mouth, while the pink girl started to suck on her cock.

The two girls with Mentaru and Kosei thrusted their dicks up and penetrated the golden girls holes.

"Oh yeah that feels great. keep sucking.~" I moaned and continued my thrusting.

Mentaru and Kosei were throw away by pleasure, feeling a dick rub against theirs as they shared the holes they fucked. They loved the feeling of another cock sharing the same hole with them.

"Ok girls, I want you to cum as much as you can in her fill her up then fill up the other girls with your cocks." I said as I pounded harder.

They nodded and pounded to their limit, fast and deep, hitting the girl's G-spot numerous times.

They started to cum and the girl had came hard. They held her tightly as their cum exploded, spilling out of her pussy and anus.

Then it came out of her mouth and hit Kosei in the face. She grabbed her face and kissed her, swallowing her own cum.

"You taste so good sweetie.~" Kosei moaned as she broke the kiss.

She didn't say anything, as the cum from the four cocks inside her continued to fill her completely.

I pounded harder and came after, along with the girl. We came in her mouth and pussy and filled her so much. Some leaked out of her mouth and pussy.

"Fuck….this is so hot." I moaned as I thrusted.

The four girls pulled out and their cum spilled out of her holes. The golden girl panted heavily, her body covered in cum. To my surprise, her bloated body shrunk back to her sexy slim body.

"Girls you want my cum?" I asked.

They all nodded. I pulled out, and my semen came out of her pussy like a waterfall. They all gathered and sucked and licked her pussy, getting as much as they can. She moaned, feeling so many warm tongues gliding around her slit.

"More….I need more, master.~" The golden girl moaned, as she rubbed her clit.

"Well girls she want more, so give her more." I smirked.

They smirked as well and they approached her. They lifted her up and by surprise, they all lined their cocks up to her pussy and actually penetrated her all together.

"YES!" She screamed in bliss. "FUCK ME LIKE A FUCKING BITCH WHORE!"

Wow she really needs it badly. The girl complied and they all thrusted at different times, some leaving and some thrusting in. The girl was in total heaven by the amount of dicks and breasts pressing against her.

"Hey could you suck my balls too and can you two try to see who make be feel better to the girl I fucked?" I asked.

"How about we help?" A new voice asked.

I turned to see my other elemental dragons, with lust filled smirks.

"Oh, hello ladies. Nice for you all to drop in." I smiled.

"You starting a fuck fest without us? That's not fair." Mizu frowned cutely.

"I'm sure our mother and sister would love our help.~" Kasai smirked and they all stripped down and grew their breasts.

Kasai was an N-cup, Chikyū at L-cup, Mizu at K-cup, Rai was I-cup. Kaze was O-cup, and Meian was T-cup.

Hello, mama." I smirked. "Meian I want to suck your tits dry, Kaze, Rai, Mizu, Chikyū, grow cocks and fuck the golden girls anus. Kasai, I want you to scissor Meian. I got some others to join in." I told them.

Meian then put her nipples in my face and I started to suck as hard as I could while Kasai grinded her pussy against hers.

Thinking, I got a new idea.

"*Meian how big can your nipples get?"*

'*Big as you want."* She replied.

"*Make them grow."* She nodded and her nipples grew. They growed as thick as a silver dollar.

Kaze, Rai, Mizu, and Chikyū grew cocks, at 12 inches (30.48cm) long and thrusted into the golden girls anus. Due to the cum left, it was easy to slide in. As they fuck her I couldn't stop thinking about sex. This was amazing.

I then concentrated and a few more orbs flew out and new girls appeared.

One was fire, with long hair, wearing belly dancer outfit, with P-cup breasts

The next was earth, short yellow hair, wearing a belly dancer outfit as well, and has Q-cup bust.

The other was wind. Green hair that stopped to her shoulders, belly dancer outfit as well, and T-cup breasts.

"I Want you three to make out."

They started to make out. Tongues danced and they moaned.

"Grow cocks and mouth fuck the golden whores mouth." I smirked.

They pulled their pants down and 10 inch (25.4cm) long dicks grew. They walked over and they stuff their rods in her mouth.

She happily moaned and her long tongue slithered around their meaty rods as they thrusted, deep throating her.

Kasai thrusted her pussy harder into Meian, and she moaned in pleasure.

"Fuck, sister, you fucking whore. Punish me!" She screamed.

She smirked and thrusted harder, while grabbing her leg.

The girls fuckign the golden girl were making out and rubbing each others breasts and legs, trying to keep the pleasure going longer.

"*This is the best mating I've ever done, mother."* Mentaru moaned while her tongue danced with hers and her cock rubbing against hers in the girls pussy. Three pairs of large breasts were pressing against their bodies and heads.

"*Shh...just fuck. Don't think."* Kosei moaned, squeezing her daughter's breasts.

They started to fuck REALLY hard. I was surprised on how hard they are fucking.

"Okay, ladies, cum once again. Let her feel all of that cum." I said.

They all held each other tight, grabbing the gold ones body, pressing their breasts against her and fucked her like wild animals in a wild heat that they can't stop.

Kasai was moving her hips wildly, as her pussy grinded harder and faster against Meians. Their clits brushing again and again. Powerful pleasurable sensation was coursing through their blood. All I could do, is just enjoy this, and have pleasure take over me.

"*Hey pink one, come here."* The pink one I fucked with from before walked over to me.

"What is your desire, master?" She asked.

'*I want you to join in on the tribadism. Place your pussy in the center of the two."* She nodded and spread the two dragons legs. She entwined with theirs and shoved her pussy in the center, touching the two deeply.

"YES, THAT FEELS SO GOOD!" Meian screamed and bucked her hips harder against the two wet warmth of flesh against her.

The group of girls were slamming their hips, multiple skin slapping sounds heard. Finally, they all thrusted one last time together and came at once in the golden girl.

I heard a voice in my head, *"MORE, MORE GIVE ME MORE!"* It was coming from the golden girl. Holy shit. That much and she still wants to continue.

The girls around her were thrusting hard into her as they keep cumming. Thier seed blasted in her holes and her mouth. Her body bloating and her throat swallowing so much of their cum. They made sure they make every ounce (milliliter) of their cum go into her.

Meian, Kasai and the pink girl furiously grinded hard, until I let them cum as well. They pushed one final time, and they screamed, as their cum splashed out, covering their thighs and legs. They moaned and kept thrusting, riding through their orgasm.

Once they were finished, they pulled out and she fell on the ground, panting once again. Like before, her body turned back to her slim form.

"M….more…..I want more…." She whispered. "More….I WANT MORE!"

"*Holy….how can she keep going?"* I thought in shock.

"Due to how long we haven't had dicks in us, we are needed to be satisfied so many times." Kosei answered me. "We can also keep our energy and hormones up for as long as we want."

"*But...but will she walk?"* That was one thing I was concerned for her. After what happened with Gel, I felt bad.

"Not to worry, sweetie. Her chi can keep any parts in her body from injuring. She can go all night long and her legs will be fine." She explained further, smiling warmly.

"*Oh how much can she fit in her?"*

"As much as you want we can even go through her." She smirked, licking her lips.

"So this is where you've been the entire time." A voice said.

I turned and was surprised to see Gel, Skelly, Silk, Endy, Cupa and Even Snowy.

I force the nipples out of my mouth.

"I CAN EXPLAIN!" I yelled in full fear.

"You've been down here for nearly an hour, fucking these girls…." Gel said, with anger in her voice, which I sweated a little.

"And you didn't invite us.~" I looked back at them in shock, seeing lust filled smirks and half lidded eyes.

"You...you girls are not mad?" I asked.

"Oh no. We want you more than these bitches." Silk smirked.

Kosei looked at her and smirked back. "Bitches, huh? Well, then, how about you all come over here and teach us what you all know. And….how about me and my children help you with...your sizes?~"

They all smirked and literally ripped their clothing off, exposing their sexy bodies. The dragons shot beams at them, and their breasts grew.

Gel was at Y-cup, Skelly was U-cup, Silk was O-cup, Endy was W-cup, Cupa was at V-cup and Snowy at Z-cup.

"Holy shit…" I breathed and got harder than a diamond.

"Oh they're so heavy." The girls said all at once, holding their new large busts.

"Let me help you all with that." Kosei shot another beam at them, and they didn't feel anymore pain.

"I even added some of my power to you all, making sure you all have energy to keep going for as long as you like, and making sure your bodies are still sexy and strong, no matter what punishment you take. I even added the non pain part to your bodies, so you won't feel any pain." She smirked.

"*But it will come back all at once after this a little fun time."* Kosei thought.

"How about we add something else, to make this more fun?~" Mentaru smirked and fired her beam at them. They all moaned and by surprise, they bared 10 inch (25.4cm) cocks, minus Snowy.

The golden girl saw their new manhoods and was drooling, and her cum was leaking from her legs. "Give me those cocks...SHOVE THEM INTO ME!"

They all smirked and they walked over to the group, swaying their hips, as their massive breasts and their cocks bounce a little.

Kosei rose the golden girl up and shoved her cock into the girl's pussy, making her scream in ecstasy. However, four of her children rose her up and lined their dicks to her pussy, while her other three lined their to her ass.

Gel, Skelly and Silk lined her up to the girl's pussy, while Endy and Cupa lined theirs up to her ass. The fire, water, and earth girl lined theirs up in the girl's ass. The wind, lightning, and pink one lined thiers up to the golden girls pussy as well. The light and dark girl lined hers up into her ass.

Snowy gently grabbed my shoulders and she lied down on her back. Her 9 tails gently holding and stroking my naked body. I shivered in pleasure by the soft and slightly ticklish feeling. She smirked and two of her tails stroked my cock and balls, making me moan loud. I got very hard now. I needed to fuck her raw.

"Shove that hard cock into my wet pussy, sweetie.~" She purred, licking her lips.

I smirked and grabbed her sexy hips. Lining up my cock to her slits. I thrusted hard into her, having her take all 15 inches into her. She screamed in pleasure, as she held me tightly. Her massive, soft, warm breasts pressing against my chest.

"Shit...you're so fucking tight." I groaned. I saw blood seeping from her cunt. She was a virgin. However, due to the dragons chi, she canceled the pain in her body.

Her tails glided around my body, while two stroked and fondled with my balls. "Fuck me raw, sweetie.~" She purred seductively.

I smirked and started to pound her, making her moan loud in pleasure. Her luscious, massive breasts swinging with each pounding.

The girls in the group wasted no time either. They all shoved their dicks up in the golden girl and in Kosei hard, making every single cock go balls deep into their tight holes.

Kosei moaned loudly, while the golden girl screamed in pleasure. She never would have thought to have so many cocks shoved deep into her holes. It was the best feeling of pleasure ever.

"Oh, wow. So this is what it feels like to have a dick.~" Gel moaned.

"I want to keep doing this from now on when I fuck any of you.~" Skelly moaned.

All of the girls started to move at different times in the two, as they moaned and screamed in pleasure. They latched onto different breasts and kissed and made out with others.

I latched onto Snowys breast and sucked hard, making her moan in pleasure. I tasted her milk and it tasted sweet.

"Oh, fuck, Daniel.~ This is amazing.~" Snowy moaned.

Then, Mentaru had an idea. "Daniel, tell your dragons to grow their tails please.~"

I was a little confused but nodded. "All of you, grow your dragon tails."

As told, they grew their smooth, long warm tails, along with the adults. They were all about 4 feet (121.92cm) long.

"What are you all-" I didn't get to finish as I got my answer. Every single tail rose up and they all thrusted into the golden girls pussy and ass. The cum in both holes were used as lube to move around much easier.

"YES! FUCK ME LIKE THE SLUT I AM! I'M YOUR FUCKING WHORE FOREVER! I WANT MORE! I WANT EVERY PART OF ME COVERED IN CUM!" She screamed.

They smirked and the dicks and tails thrusted and pounded deep, fast and hard into her. Some of them wrapped around other dicks and stroked them, making some of them moan loud.

'*Holy shit. That's fucking hot.'* I thought.

"Down here, big boy.~" Snowy purred. I looked down and continued to pound her. I kissed her deeply, making her kiss back. Our tongues danced and bodies pressing closer.

The girls all kissed, touched and massaged each others bodies, while the golden girl was lost in pleasure. She loved sex, and she is willing to be used for sex with her elemental dragon servants, the girls in Daniels harem and the elemental dragons for life.

"Come on, ladies. Give her what she wants. Use whatever you can to make that whore explode. Show me what you all can do to turn me on harder and fuck her more extreme." I smirked and pounded Snowy faster.

They started to fuck her with all of their dicks in her at once. *"HOLY SHIT! HOW...WAIT WHAT AM I SAYING!?"* I thought as they fuck so fast they become a blur to my eyes.

Then they pounded with so much force they forced her to the other girls that were fucking her ass. They came back and forth she was force to one side to another they grabbed her tight and they call came at once, screaming loudly. She became less of a person. More of a blimp a huge one at that.

"*Oh yeah. I love it.~*" The golden girl moaned, from inside my head. Her dragon chi activated and she was still keeping her sexy slim form.

I pounded as hard as I could and I came after, filling Snowy completely. She moaned and purred by my hot cum. Her stomach look huge from call that cum I put in her.

(LEMON END)

What felt like eternity, our energy finally died down. We all panted and sighed in satisfaction. The girls all cuddled up to me, making their massive breasts press against me. I didn't even need a blanket or pillow.

"That was awesome." I said, nuzzling into the bust pile.

"That was the best mating I've ever done." Mentaru cooed as she licked her mother's breasts.

"If you ever want to fuck me, master, give me the command, and I'll fulfill your desires." The golden girl smiled warmly.

"We also know your other fetishes, and we'll be using them in our next fuck fest." Kosei smirked, stroking her daughter's hair.

I chuckled. "Well, I'll be looking forward to it." I then yawned.

"Shh...you look tired, sweetie. Rest for the moment. Sleep, and use our warm bodies as your bed, pillow and blanket." Kosei whispered in her sweet voice.

The girls all slowly grinded against me, making me softly moan. With my body tired, and the pleasure of their warm bodies. I rested against the breasts and fell asleep.

(A few Moments later…)

Me and the girls got out of the room after we finished resting up after that massive fuck fest. We saw what was a massive sand castle with 74, Shady and his dragon on top. I then saw Fay walk up to me with her face redder than normal.

"Um...Daniel, do humans normally have huge bulges?" She asked.

"What are you talking about, Fay?" I asked her back.

Fay then blushed. "I….um, look over there" She pointed at the castle then I saw 74 with his dragons. I looked closer to him and….Holy shit.

"He been like that the whole time." She explained.

I looked at 74, and saw a GINORMOUS bulge. I mean it didn't look hard or anything. Just a LOT larger than usual for a normal boy. His dragons also looked down as well. His fire girl hugged him gently, while the water girl gave him a small peck on his cheek, making him blush. I was smiling. Things are getting better for him.

"Hey, 74!" I called. He and his dragons looked down. "Did you build this with your dragons!?"

"Y...yes." He called quietly.

"This is great! You're great when it comes to crafting and building!" I called.

"T...thank you." He replied.

The golden girl hugged me, making her breasts press against me. She kissed me hard on the cheek, making me blush, but chuckle

"What's gotten her so clingy to you?" Fay asked.

"She's like meseria but like to hug me a lot." I explained.

"That reminds me, Daniel. You never gave your dragon girls any names. Who are you gonna call who?" Kosei asked.

She was right about that. I didn't name my girls yet. "Hmmm...I'll name you Blaze," I pointed at the fire girl. "Your name will be strongheart," Pointing at the earth girl, "Yours is Wave," To the blue girl, "You will be Kassi," The pink one, "You name is Thunder," The cyan girl. "You will be Gust," The wind girl, "You will be Black Sun," The light and dark girl, "And you, will be named….Goldie." To the golden girl.

They all smiled by their new names, especially Goldie. She kissed me hard on the lips, forcing her tongue into my mouth, moaning loudly. I just kissed her back with the same passion.

"Wait what time is it?" I asked, breaking the kiss.

"Hang on. I'll take a look outside." Snowy ran off to the entrance of the caves. A little later, she returned. "It seems nightfall has came."

"What about the storm?" I asked.

"It's still going. We're gonna be here for the night." She answered.

"Wait what do we have for beds?"

Gel opened one of the chests that has the beds, but apparently, there wasn't enough.

"We only have enough beds for 12 people." She said.

"That's not good." I said.

"Who should get them?" Fay asked.

"I think it would be best that you, 74's girls, Adam, and his girls take them." I said.

"What about you and your girls?" Fay asked.

"Well, we did find this room, so I won't have a problem sharing it with them." I stated.

"What about 74?"

He then jumped down. "I'll be fine with sleeping on the ground."

"Are you sure, 74?" His fire girl asked.

"You get used it. I've done it for years." He answered. "Besides….I want to make sure everyone else feels better before me."

'*He cares for others before himself, just like me.'* I thought smiling. *'You're a great and kind person, 74.'*

As I walked back to the trap door, I could see 74 with his dragons, Fay and Shady.

'*Wait...where's Adam?"* I thought.

I then heard a grunt and shout. I then turned to see Adam swinging his swords around. His shirt was off. It looked like he was training. His dragons and Boom were watching, with lust in their eyes. They were drinking his body up, watching his muscles move and tighten with every move he made.

"*Show off."* I smiled and shook my head. I left and we all entered the room from before.

I yawned, feeling sleepy.

"You tired?" Kosei asked.

"Yeah. Man, today was a hassle. I need rest." I sighed.

"Then let us help you, relax.~" Skelly cooed. The girls all took off my clothing, only leaving my underwear on. They all them took their clothing off as well, naked before me again. I blushed, but not by a lot.

"No matter how many time I'll keep seeing you all naked, all of you will still looks so hot in my eyes." I smiled truthfully.

"Thank you Daniel" They all said at once.

"Come. Let us sleep." Kosei gently grabbed my hands and the girls guided me to the bed. Kosei laid down, with Endy and Meian on each side of her. I laid down and their breasts acted as pillows. The rest of the girls gathered around me and their breasts acted as blankets for me. Goldie was in the center.

"Ah, this is nice." I smiled.

Goldie smirked and slowly snaked her hand down. She rubbed my manhood from my underwear, making me moan.

"G….Goldie.~" I moaned.

"Yes master?~" said Goldie.

My body was burning. My hormones started to burn. I didn't even have control.

"P...please...I…"

"Sorry what was that?~" Goldie smirked.

"Please...put it in your mouth for the rest of the night just don't suck or use your tongue otherwise you wake up with cum in your mouth." I whispered.

Goldie smirked. "As you wish, master.~" She pulled my underwear down and my cock was freed. She turned around and let my cock sink into her mouth.

I moaned, feeling the warmth of her mouth. She had the biggest smile on her face right now. The, she wrapped her tongue around it and started to suck.

"G...Goldie.~ I told you….to…." I grunted.

She only moaned and ignored my words.

"To...too….suck me harder." I grunted and my legs wrapped around her head, forcing to deepthroat her.

She moaned louder and sucked faster.

"You're not leaving us out, sexy.~" Mentaru smirked as her breasts grew to T-cup.

The other girls smirked as they began to kiss and lick my body. I was in for a long night.

(meanwhile with 74 right after Daniel goes in the room)

"..S..so um girls how about you take the beds."

"Yes 74" his three dragons said as they got into the beds they were fast a sleep.

"But 74 you can't the ground is cold." said Fay, a little concerned.

"Trust me it's not the first time I've been forced into a cold place." He said.

Fay frowned. She then made a decision.

"If that's the case, I'll sleep on the ground with you."

"...no your not." He said shaking his head.

"I don't care what you're answer will be, I care about you, 74. I'm sleeping next to you on the ground, weather you like it or not. That's final." She said in a firm, but gentle voice.

"*Hey Ember could you do something for me?"*

"*Of course. What is it?"*

"*Fay's going to hate me for this, but can you put a sleep spell on her and put her in a bed?"*

"*Of course."* Ember got up from her bed and tapped her head, making her gasp. Then, she closed her eyes and fell asleep. Ember caught her and placed her on a bed. After that, she smiled at 74 and returned to the bed.

"Shady can you go to bed please?" 74 asked.

"Ok I will, but could I tell you something first?" Shady asked.

"S..sure?" 74 said shyly.

"I know we only met in one day, and I don't know much about you…" She smiled sweetly. "But I want to let you know...I'm here if you want to talk to me. I care for you. Remember, no matter what happens, I will never abandon you." She leaned and kissed his cheek.

He blushed a crimson red.

"I..I don't know what to say." He said quietly.

"You don't have to say anything." Shady smiled warmly. "I'm happy you're here, and I know a great future is bright for you. And I'll always be there for you, every step of the way, and...I'll do anything for you. Just don't be shy about it. You can ask me anything. And...one more thing...I find your shyness really cute. It fits you perfectly." Shady said.

"I..um could...I ask you something.....c..ca..can I pet y..your e..ears p..please?" 74 said very shyly and with his face having a crimson color to it.

She blushed, but she smiled sweetly. "Of course." She leaned down and her ears were there for him to scratch.

He placed his left hand on her ear and started to petting her ear. He can tell she loved it by her tails going back and forth. This lasted for a minute, until he pulled his hand back.

"D..do you feel better shady?" He asked

"Very much and thank you, you're the best." Shady said smiling warmly.

"T..thank you… let's go to bed now, I'm tired." he said

"Ok, good night, 74." She went to her bed. While she did, one of her tails moved along his chest. She looked back and winked at him with her left eye. 74 was just thinking on how nice these new girls are to him as he went to the floor and had one last look at his necklace.

"Freddy...you would loved it here" he said quietly as tears come out of his eye "Miss you brother."he said as he cried himself to sleep.

"*Poor Ian. I can't see him sad like this, but he's asleep now and I don't want to wake him up. I'll give him a….surprise tomorrow "* thought Shady.

Starshine89: And it's done! The chapter was to be published yesterday, but we had to delay it. Why? Well, I don't want to brag or anything, buuuuut…. I got to go to One World Observatory! ^^

Sonic3461: How awesome is that!? It must have been fun for you, bro. ^^

Starshine89: Thanks dude. And thanks for waiting.

Sonic3461: Hey, we work together, and we finish together.

Cosmicsafe74: Very true.

Starshine89: Aaaaa'ight, that's going to do it for this chapter! Thanks so much for reading, guys.

Sonic3461: We had so much fun making this, and I can't believe we reached over 25,000 words for this one chapter. That's a huge accomplishment for us to look at.

Starshine89: Even I haven't written that much. *Ever*.

Sonic3461: With you there, bro, but this was all worth it.

Cosmicsafe74: I will say this chapter made me cry about the parts with 74.

Sonic3461: Our OCs have all lived through a lot, but their futures are now bright, now that they're in Minecraft.

Starshine89: I just wish I could be there. Life's good when you play more. *wink wink*

Sonic3461: Not to mention you get to hang with the ladies, if you know what I mean. I mean seriously, that lemon was so fucking hot as hell.

Starshine89: Amen, brother. I just hope we didn't push the envelope too far.

Sonic3461: Nah, I think we're okay. Besides, some people like extreme lemons like this. But, just want to warn you all that this kind of stuff,

and other extreme fetishes in lemons will appear in the story, so be wary about it.

Cosmicsafe74: I want to say that it was really fun writing this chapter with Sonic3461 and Starshine89.

Starshine89: It's been fun with ya too, Cosmic.

Cosmicsafe74: Thanks. ^^

Sonic3461: It's been great working with you two. Our work is far from done. We still have a way to go. Please give your thanks and support to these two authors for the hard work put in this chapter. Thanks again for reading, and stay tuned for the next chapter of MHS! ^^

All: See you all soon!

Sonic summons the Chaos Emeralds and vanishes in a white light.

Cosmicsafe74 got back in his bolo and flies off into the sunset.

Starshine89 takes out a SAMSUNG Galaxy S7 edge™, and holds it in front of him. It scans him, and he vanishes, along with the phone.

Adam appears out of nowhere, looks at the camera, and chuckles.

9. Announcement

Hey everyone, this is an announcement. I want to say I'm really sorry for not updating in such a long time. I work with Cosmic and Starshine. Our timelines are far out different, so we barley work due to that, but we're trying our best to get the next chapter out, and with Cosmic working with a night shift, and me with collage, things are pretty tied up for us all. We'll try our very best too get the next chapter up as soon as possible.

Also, any of you Trollers out there who's saying about the stuff we're adding, fuck you. You're not the boss of the rating in the site. Go fuck yourselves.

Thank you all for your patience and we'll see you all later.

10. update 2

Hey everyone! This is sonic3461 here. I know all of you have been waiting a long time to see the next update of MHS. it still won;t be awhile, but not to worry, I have a back up plan.

I'm working with an Author called OmegaDecion and his minecraft story Minecraft-Legend of the Creator. Check it out when you can on his page, and the news doesn't stop.

I will be making a remastered version of MHS on my page. The old on will still be on, it will be a long time until I get things back up with the others I work with on this story, but I will keep this story up on my page and will try to get it updated as soon as I can, but I will have a remastered version on the page very soon.

Hope you're all excited about that. See you all very soon in the new remastered version of MHS. ^^